



Photo of Gatewood School students on last day of school, Seattle, June 17, 1949. Courtesy Museum of History & Industry.

HistoryLink.org Supplement for
Washington: A State of Contrasts

Washington: A State of Contrasts has been identified as the most commonly used Washington state History textbook for 7th and 8th grades for the 2011-12 school year. Using this textbook as a base for identifying the specific themes and topics that are being covered in required Pacific Northwest History middle school classes, the Education Team at HistoryLink.org has created this supplement for teacher and students.

This supplement was developed as a tool to assist in identifying HistoryLink.org essays that can be used to study and research the state history themes and topic in more depth. The name of each relevant essay is listed as well as the abstract, number, and link to the full essay. This supplement also aids HistoryLink.org in identifying general or specific topics for which more essays are needed or would be helpful in the Washington state History classroom. In addition, as a part of this exercise, HistoryLink.org staff assigned appropriate key words to selected essays to match those used in this textbook.

A set of *HistoryLink Elementary* essays was added to the HistoryLink encyclopedia in 2014. (<http://www.historylink.org/Index.cfm?DisplayPage=education/elementary-educators.cfm>.) These essays were written for beginning readers who are studying Washington state history or anyone who wants to learn more about Washington. They may be helpful for some of your students. All *HistoryLink Elementary* essays are based on existing HistoryLink essays. They have been listed under appropriate pages that match the specific topics in *Washington: A State of Contrasts*.

The plan is to update this supplement prior to the beginning of each semester by identifying and adding relevant essays as written by HistoryLink.org historians. Please contact education@historylink.org with questions and comments.

Prepared by Education Team, Patricia L, Filer (Education Director) and Claire Palay (Education Intern) 2011. Updated 8-14.

Washington: A State of Contrasts

(copyright 2008)

Geographic Reference Section

Reference Atlas

About Washington

Chapter 1: Geological History

Chapter 2: The Natural Environment

Chapter 3: Coastal and Plateau Indians

Chapter 4: Sea and Land Explorers, 1543-1806

Chapter 5: The Fur Trade Era, 1786-1846

Chapter 6: The Early Missionaries and Pioneers, 1834-1847

Chapter 7: Territorial Government and Indian Wars, 1847-1877

Chapter 8: The Statehood Era, 1859-1889

Chapter 9: The Progressive Era and the Twenties, 1889-1929

Chapter 10: The Great Depression and World War II, 1929 – 1945

Chapter 11: The Post War Years, 1945-1979

Chapter 12: The Contemporary Era, 1980-Present

Chapter 13: State Government and Politics

CHAPTER 1: GEOLOGICAL HISTORY

p. 3 - J Harlen Betz (see p. 25 below)

p. 4-7 - Plate tectonics

Seattle Fault Zone is first described in *Science* on December 4, 1992. On December 4, 1992, the prestigious journal *Science* publishes five papers on what is now known as the Seattle Fault Zone, a previously undescribed, several-mile-wide area of crustal weakness running from about Issaquah, under Seattle's Seahawks Stadium and Safeco Field, through Alki Point and Restoration Point to Hood Canal. Using an array of seemingly disconnected evidence the reports's authors show that roughly 1,100 years ago a massive earthquake rippled across the Seattle landscape. It is startling news because until that time few had suspected the existence of the fault. [File 9388: Full Text >](#)

Okanogan terrane docks against North American continent 100 million years ago. About 100 million years ago, in the late Mesozoic Era, the Okanogan terrane (microcontinent) docks against the North American continent. This collision adds to the land mass of North America and extends the coastline of the Pacific Northwest about 50 miles farther west. Before the Okanogan terrane docking, the coastline ran along the present-day Idaho-Washington border. In the formation of the Pacific Northwest region over millions of years, there have been some 50 terrane dockings. These dockings, along with plate-tectonics (the sinking of the Pacific plate underneath the North American plate), tremendous volcanic episodes, and the advance and retreat of glaciers contributed to the Puget Sound landscape that we know today. [File 5086: Full Text >](#)

HistoryLink Elementary: How the Land in Washington Was Formed Land formations in Washington and the Pacific Northwest were a result of millions of years of changes in weather conditions and the environment. Glaciers and other geological forces created islands, mountains, lakes, and other specific land formations. [File 10740: Full Text >](#)

p. 14-15 – Prehistoric Wildlife

Benjamin Copen discovers mammoth bones on Hangman Creek in May 1876. In May 1876, Benjamin Copen (1843-1912), a homesteader on Hangman (present Latah) Creek south of Spokane, discovers huge, mysterious bones in a bog near his spring. These fossils and others unearthed by neighbors are eventually identified as those of the Columbian mammoth. They soon begin circuitous journeys that will end in major museums in Chicago and New York. [File 7512: Full Text >](#)

Climbers find basalt mold and bones of a 15-million-year-old rhinoceros at Blue Lake, Grant County, in July 1935. In July 1935, two Seattle couples hiking near Blue Lake in Grant County in Eastern Washington clamber into a cave of basalt. They notice it has an unusual shape, sort of like the mold of large, upside down animal. They also find a few bones. Word of the bones soon reaches geologist George Beck at Washington State Normal School (now Central Washington University), who examines the bones and the cave and determines that the cave is a mold of a rhinoceros that died 15 million years ago. A basalt flow had covered the dead and bloated beast, preserving a mold of its body in stone. It is one of the most unusual fossils known. [File 9409: Full Text >](#)

Construction at Sea-Tac Airport unearths an extinct giant sloth on February 14, 1961. On Tuesday, February 14, 1961, while working on a runway at Sea-Tac International Airport, Gordon Simmons of Sellen Construction Company spots bones sticking out of a recently excavated hole. Digging stops and paleontologists from the Burke

Museum are called in to investigate. They find additional bones, eventually totaling about 60 percent of the body of a giant sloth, known as *Megalonyx jeffersonii*. The extinct animal lived around 12,600 years ago and was the size of a Mini Cooper. A display at the Burke Museum now showcases the discovery, mounted as a complete skeleton.

[File 9408: Full Text >](#)

Emanuel Manis finds mastodon tusks in Sequim on August 8, 1977. On August 8, 1977, Emanuel "Manny" Manis (1926-2000) unearths mastodon tusks while excavating a dry peat bog on his property on the southern outskirts of Sequim, Clallam County. The typically marshy area is dry due to a drought that summer, and conditions are ideal for Manis's intentions of digging out a smaller area within the bog to create a permanent pond. His backhoe begins bringing up what at first appear to be old logs. He and his wife Clare soon realize they are looking not at logs, but at tusks nearly eight feet long. They contact archaeology and paleontology experts who begin excavation of the site, confirming that the tusks and other bones are those of a mastodon preserved in the wet peat for 13,000 to 14,000 years. An unrelated bone they soon find embedded in a rib, if indeed a spear tip, provides the first evidence that humans interacted with these prehistoric proboscidian mammals that resemble our elephant (but with molar teeth of a different structure). [File 8511: Full Text >](#)

Ice Age mammoth tusk is discovered at Moxee on May 10, 2001. On May 10, 2001, construction workers discover a mammoth tusk in a site being prepared for a new parking lot in the small town of Moxee, just east of Yakima. Fossil experts at the Quaternary Research Center at the University of Washington later conclude that the tusk came from an animal swept to its death about 14,500 years ago, by one of the cataclysmic floods that periodically inundated the Pacific Northwest during the last Ice Age. [File 8496: Full Text >](#)

HistoryLink Elementary: Prehistoric Animals in Washington Over the past thousands of years, many varieties of mammals lived in what is now Washington. Several important fossils of prehistoric mammals have been discovered in different parts of the state. [File 10746: Full Text >](#)

Retreating glaciers create Puget Sound and Grand Coulee as the Ice Age ends about 15,000 years ago. About 15,000 years ago, the Vashon glacier begins to melt and recede from lands that will come to be known as the Puget Sound region and the Columbia Basin region. By 11,000 years ago, the glacier has retreated to the border of present-day Canada. During its advance, the glacier had carved out Lake Washington, Lake Tapps, Lake Sammamish, Puget Sound, and Hood Canal. The other major shaper of the land -- the pushing of the Pacific Plate underneath the North American plate, and the docking of terranes (fragments of continents) had already occurred long ago. [File 5087: Full Text >](#)

p.20, 21, 26 Mt. Rainier (volcano)

Mount Rainier erupts on October 19, 1873. On October 19, 1873, at about 4 o'clock p.m. "clouds of smoke were seen pouring from the highest peak of Mount Rainer [sic]." People continue observing the outpouring of smoke until clouds obscure the mountain near nightfall. [File 5573: Full Text >](#)

p. 20,21,28,29 – Mt. St. Helens

Geologist warns on April 12, 1968, that Mount St. Helens could erupt at any time. On April 12, 1968, a federal geologist warns that Mount St. Helens could erupt at any time. [File 1381: Full Text >](#)

Mount St. Helens erupts on May 18, 1980. On May 18, 1980 at 8:32 a.m., the earth rumbles underneath Mount St. Helens, a peak in Skamania County in southwestern Washington. Moments later an explosion blasts away a side of the mountain in a major volcanic eruption. The volcano causes the deaths of 57 people. The destruction is widespread but especially severe in Clark County as boiling gas and mud scour 200 square miles of forest and 30 miles of State Route 504. Some 1,000 miles of state highways and roads have to be closed, some for months, and highway repairs alone run into hundreds of millions of dollars. [File 5457: Full Text >](#)

Burlington Northern loses its mountaintop in Mount St. Helens blast of May 18, 1980. At 8:32 a.m. Sunday morning, May 18, 1980, Mount St. Helens in Southwest Washington ends months of geologic suspense and erupts, blasting tons of Burlington Northern Railroad property into the air and ultimately across much of Eastern Washington, Northern Idaho, and Western Montana. [File 8741: Full Text >](#)

Hundreds of frightened and frustrated motorists caught in the Mt. St. Helens ash fall attempt to escape Ritzville on May 20, 1980. On May 20, 1980, two days after the eruption of Mt. St. Helens on May 18, some 2,500 motorists -- more than Ritzville's own population -- are stuck in Ritzville. They are jammed into school gyms, hospital corridors, churches and restaurants. By May 20, hundreds of them are so tired and impatient that they defy police orders and attempt to drive out of Ritzville despite the fact that Interstate 90 and other roads are officially closed. Most of them don't get more than a few miles before the gritty blowing ash forces them to turn back. Many motorists end up stalled on the shoulders and have to be rescued. A few make it as far as the Schrag Rest Area, about 22 miles west, but fewer than 100 make it out. [File 9398: Full Text >](#)

HistoryLink Elementary: Mount St. Helens Erupts Mount St. Helens once was the fifth-highest mountain in Washington. Now, because of a huge eruption on May 18, 1980, it is only the 30th highest peak in the state. There were many signs that the mountain was going to erupt before it finally did. Some people took the warnings seriously and some did not. There was terrible damage to the property surrounding the mountain and many lives were lost. But it was not the first time that Mount St. Helens had erupted. Diaries of early explorers and missionaries -- and many stories or legends passed down through Native American tribes -- describe volcanic eruptions that happened long ago. [File 10738: Full Text >](#)

p. 22-23 - Ice Age Floods/Lake Missoula Flood

Bretz, J Harlen (1882-1981), Geologist J Harlen Bretz was a geologist whose ideas about the origins of the "scablands" of Eastern Washington evoked ridicule when he first proposed them, in the 1920s, but eventually revolutionized the science of geology. Bretz argued that the deep canyons and pockmarked buttes of the scablands had been created by a sudden, catastrophic flood -- not, as most of his peers believed, by eons of gradual erosion. It was a bold challenge to the prevailing principle of "uniformitarianism," which held that the earth was shaped by processes that can be observed in the present. Since a flood of the almost Biblical proportions envisioned by Bretz had never been seen, it was dismissed as a throwback to the pre-scientific doctrine of "catastrophism." Not until the 1940s did other geologists begin to present new evidence supporting the flood theory. Satellite imagery in the 1970s provided the final vindication. Bretz had the satisfaction of living long enough to see his once heretical ideas become the new orthodoxy. In 1979, at age 96, he received the Penrose Medal, geology's highest honor. He later reportedly told his son: "All my enemies are dead, so I have no one to gloat over" (*Smithsonian*). [File 8382: Full Text >](#)

Ice Age Floods in Washington: A Cybertour This Cybertour explores the impact of the Ice Age floods on Washington state. It was written and curated by Cassandra Tate, and made possible by a grant from the Peach Foundation. Glenn Drosendahl provided the principal photography; geologist Bruce Bjornstad, author of *On the Trail of the Ice Age Floods*, served as guide and technical advisor. [File 8449: Full Text >](#)

HistoryLink Elementary: How the Land in Washington Was Formed Land formations in Washington and the Pacific Northwest were a result of millions of years of changes in weather conditions and the environment. Glaciers and other geological forces created islands, mountains, lakes, and other specific land formations. [File 10740: Full Text >](#)

p. 25 - J Harlen Bretz

Bretz, J Harlen (1882-1981), Geologist J Harlen Bretz was a geologist whose ideas about the origins of the "scablands" of Eastern Washington evoked ridicule when he first proposed them, in the 1920s, but eventually revolutionized the science of geology. Bretz argued that the deep canyons and pockmarked buttes of the scablands had been created by a sudden, catastrophic flood -- not, as most of his peers believed, by eons of gradual erosion. It was a bold challenge to the prevailing principle of "uniformitarianism," which held that the earth was shaped by processes that can be observed in the present. Since a flood of the almost Biblical proportions envisioned by Bretz had never been seen, it was dismissed as a throwback to the pre-scientific doctrine of "catastrophism." Not until the 1940s did other geologists begin to present new evidence supporting the flood theory. Satellite imagery in the 1970s provided the final vindication. Bretz had the satisfaction of living long enough to see his once heretical ideas become the new orthodoxy. In 1979, at age 96, he received the Penrose Medal, geology's highest honor. He later reportedly told his son: "All my enemies are dead, so I have no one to gloat over" (Smithsonian). [File 8382: Full Text >](#)

p. 27 – Osceola Mudflow

Osceola Mudflow from Mount Rainier inundates the White River Valley approximately 5,600 years ago. Approximately 5,600 years ago, a massive landslide removes .7 cubic miles of earth from the summit of Mount Rainier. The ensuing mudflow, which spreads as far as modern-day Kent, is called the Osceola Mudflow. This is the largest mudflow of postglacial age in the history of Mount Rainier. [File 5095: Full Text >](#)

p. 31 – Cascadia earthquake

Earthquake of enormous magnitude hits the Pacific Northwest coast on January 26, 1700. On January 26, 1700, at about 9:00 p.m. Pacific Standard Time a gigantic earthquake occurs 60 to 70 miles off the Pacific Northwest coast. The quake violently shakes the ground for three to five minutes and is felt along the coastal interior of the Pacific Northwest including all counties in present-day Western Washington. A tsunami forms, reaching about 33 feet high along the Washington coast, travels across the Pacific Ocean and hits the east coast of Japan. Japanese sources document this earthquake, which is the earliest documented historical event Western Washington. Other evidence includes drowned groves of red cedars and Sitka spruces in the Pacific Northwest. Indian legends corroborate the cataclysmic occurrence. [File 5098: Full Text >](#)

p. 31 – Nisqually earthquake

Earthquake registering 6.8 on Richter Scale jolts Seattle and Puget Sound on February 28, 2001. At 10:54 a.m. on February 28, 2001, a deep earthquake centered near the Nisqually Delta northwest of Olympia startles the

entire Puget Sound region and causes more than \$1 billion in damage to area buildings and roads. The 40-second quake, calibrated at a magnitude of 6.8 on the revised Richter Scale, injures an estimated 200 persons in the region, and is cited as the cause of a fatal heart attack in Burien. Hardest hit structures are located in Olympia, including the State Capitol, and in Seattle's historic Pioneer Square. The quake is the strongest since 1949, although a "weaker" 1965 temblor caused more damage and was blamed for seven deaths. [File 3039: Full Text >](#)

p. 32 – Bridge of the Gods

Landslide blocks the Columbia River in about 1450. In about 1450, an immense landslide tumbles off Table Mountain in Skamania County and completely blocks the Columbia River, shoving it a mile off course. A lake forms behind the dam extending as far as 100 miles. The river will eventually breach the dam causing a 100-foot-deep flood downstream and creating the Cascades rapids. This is the most recent of four documented slides in the 14-square-mile Cascade Landslide Complex and will be called the Bonneville Landslide. [File 7797: Full Text >](#)

Chapter 2: THE NATURAL ENVIRONMENT

p. 48 – vegetation

David Douglas arrives at Fort Vancouver to begin two years of botanical exploration on April 20, 1825. On April 20, 1825, David Douglas (1799-1834) arrives at Fort Vancouver, the Hudson's Bay Company's new Columbia River headquarters, in the company of chief factor Dr. John McLoughlin (1784-1857). The young Scotsman is a collector for England's Horticultural Society, dispatched to the Northwest Coast to bring back specimens and seeds of the marvelous and new (to Europeans) plants of the region, for introduction into British gardens and forests. For the next two years, Douglas will use Fort Vancouver as a base for botanical explorations through much of present-day Washington and Oregon, where he will collect thousands of specimens of plants ranging from tiny, rare mosses and herbs to the giant and abundant tree that now bears his name, the Douglas fir (*Pseudotsuga menziesii*, not actually a fir, but a member of a Pacific Rim genus). [File 7298: Full Text >](#)

p. 50 –52 - geographic regions – see map on Advanced Search page of HistoryLink.org
<http://www.historylink.org/index.cfm?DisplayPage=search.cfm>

p. 53-64 – habitats

A large cougar is shot in Seattle near Lake Union on about January 1, 1870. On about January 1, 1870, C. Brownfield shoots and kills a "large panther" in "Pioneer Valley" in Seattle, near Lake Union. The animal, very likely a cougar, is 8 feet 9 inches long and weighs 300 pounds. It has recently killed a steer belonging to David Denny (1832-1903) at the south end of Lake Union and a heifer belonging to Thomas Mercer (1813-1898) whose farm is located near Denny's. In the early 1870s, King County settlers have persistent problems with cougars. [File 1603: Full Text >](#)

Man captures cougar near Lake Washington about February 23, 1870. On February 23, 1870, Seymour Wetmore arrives in Seattle and announces that he captured a large cougar on his farm near Lake Washington. The

animal was killing sheep in the area and a trap was devised to capture the animal. Mr. Allen, a Seattle resident, buys the cougar and exhibits it in towns around Puget Sound. [File 1629: Full Text >](#)

Cougar fights mare along Duwamish River on June 10, 1872. On the evening of June 10, 1872, a "fine mare" owned by David Graham fights with a cougar to protect her colt. Graham's farm is located at Seattle's present-day south boundary just east of the Duwamish River (45th Avenue S to 50th Avenue S and S Leo St to S Juniper St). The mare suffers "deep and severe cuts" on her neck and face. The colt dies of its injuries the following day. [File 1630: Full Text >](#)

Man kills bear on Mercer Island on June 22, 1873. On June 22, 1873, Mr. G. Proctor, who lives on "an island in Lake Washington," sights a bear near his premises and gives chase. The bear "took to the lake." Proctor follows in a skiff, kills the animal with his rifle, and tows it ashore. The island is likely the one that will be named Mercer Island. In the 1870s, Gardner Proctor owns land on the northwest portion of Mercer Island. In 1873, he is about 43 years old and works as a cooper smith and hook maker. [File 1616: Full Text >](#)

CHAPTER 3: COASTAL and PLATEAU INDIANS

p.70 – Marmes Rock Shelter

Marmes Rockshelter The Marmes Rockshelter was one of the most significant archaeological sites in the Pacific Northwest, yielding thousands of Stone Age artifacts -- along with the oldest human remains yet to be found in Washington state -- before it was inundated by the reservoir behind Lower Monumental Dam on the Snake River in southeastern Washington. As the dam neared completion in the fall of 1968, Washington Senator Warren G. Magnuson (1905-1989) used his political clout to secure an emergency appropriation to build a horseshoe-shaped enclosure around the rockshelter and an adjacent floodplain, hoping it would keep the area dry enough for archaeologists to continue their work. Unfortunately, the enclosure, built on a gravel base, filled as quickly as the main reservoir. A team of scientists from Washington State University hurriedly covered what they could with plastic and sand and then watched helplessly as the site disappeared beneath 40 feet of water in February 1969. [File 7970: Full Text >](#)

HistoryLink Elementary: Marmes Rockshelter The Marmes Rockshelter was a very important archaeological find in Washington. Tools, human bones, and a cremation hearth more than 8,000 years old were discovered there. But scientists had a big problem -- the site where the Marmes Rockshelter and other caves were located was going to be flooded as soon as the Lower Monumental Dam was completed. The scientists worked very hard to learn as much as they could in the time that they had. In the end, they built structures around the archaeological sites to try to protect them from the water that would fill the reservoir behind the dam. They hoped that maybe archaeologists in the future could have the opportunity to study the sites and learn more about the people who used them thousands of years ago. [File 10749: Full Text >](#)

p. 71 – Prehistoric Tools

Emanuel Manis finds mastodon tusks in Sequim on August 8, 1977. On August 8, 1977, Emanuel "Manny" Manis (1926-2000) unearths mastodon tusks while excavating a dry peat bog on his property on the southern outskirts of Sequim, Clallam County. The typically marshy area is dry due to a drought that summer, and conditions are ideal for Manis's intentions of digging out a smaller area within the bog to create a permanent pond. His backhoe begins bringing up what at first appear to be old logs. He and his wife Clare soon realize they are looking not at logs, but at tusks nearly eight feet long. They contact archaeology and paleontology experts who begin excavation of the

site, confirming that the tusks and other bones are those of a mastodon preserved in the wet peat for 13,000 to 14,000 years. An unrelated bone they soon find embedded in a rib, if indeed a spear tip, provides the first evidence that humans interacted with these prehistoric proboscidian mammals that resemble our elephant (but with molar teeth of a different structure). [File 8511: Full Text >](#)

Moises Aguirre and Mark Mickles discover prehistoric Clovis point artifacts in an East Wenatchee apple orchard on May 27, 1987. On May 27, 1987, while installing an irrigation sprinkler pipe through an apple orchard on Grant Road in East Wenatchee near the Columbia River, orchard workers Moises Aguirre and Mark Mickles uncover a cache of 11,000-to 12,000-year-old prehistoric tools known as Clovis points buried about 20 inches below the surface. Clovis points are spearheads that were used by prehistoric peoples to hunt. The discovery excites scientific interest worldwide but raises concerns among members of the Colville Tribe. Portions of the site will be excavated in 1988 and 1990. After each dig the pits will be back-filled and protected from intrusion by four-ton concrete slabs. [File 7966: Full Text >](#)

Archaeologists unearth artifacts beginning on June 7, 2005, which indicate that Spokane is the oldest continually occupied human habitation in Washington. Beginning on June 7, 2005, archaeologists from Eastern Washington University unearth Native American artifacts from People's Park in Spokane, and their discoveries reveal the site as the oldest continually occupied human habitation in Washington. The alluvial delta where Latah Creek enters the Spokane River below Spokane Falls apparently served as a seasonal encampment as far back as 8,000 years ago. The evidence will provide important clues about the development of indigenous technology and trade throughout the region. [File 8043: Full Text >](#)

HistoryLink Elementary: Prehistoric Tools and Weapons Archaeological finds in various locations across Washington have helped scientists learn about how the earliest residents of this state lived. [File 10744: Full Text >](#)

p. 74 –75 - Kennewick Man

Kennewick Man A man who lived more than 9,000 years ago along the Columbia River in what is now central Washington's Tri-Cities area became the center of worldwide attention and heated controversy following the 1996 discovery of his nearly complete skeleton at a riverside park in Kennewick. Area Indian tribes sought to rebury the man they called the Ancient One and revered as an ancestor. The federal government agreed, but eight anthropologists and archeologists sued for the right to study the skeleton, widely known as Kennewick Man. The case dragged on for years, attended by controversies over the handling of the bones, the burial of the discovery site, and statements by some plaintiffs, amplified and distorted in popular accounts, that appeared to suggest Kennewick Man was "Caucasian" and that Europeans may have reached America before Indians did. Scientific studies, ironically conducted by the government in an effort to support its decision to turn the remains over to the Indians rather than allow studies by the plaintiffs, showed that Kennewick Man was not like Europeans, Indians, or any modern peoples. In early 2004 an appeals court affirmed a prior decision that the plaintiff scientists would be allowed to study Kennewick Man. [File 5664: Full Text >](#)

Two hydroplane racing fans discover the skull of Kennewick Man on the bank of the Columbia River on July 28, 1996. On July 28, 1996, two young West Richland men are wading along the banks of the Columbia River near Kennewick when they step on something that looks like a big rock. When they pull it from the mud, they see that it is obviously a human skull. They turn it over to police. Scientific tests determine it is at least 9,200 years old, the remains of the man who becomes known as Kennewick Man. [File 8503: Full Text >](#)

HistoryLink Elementary: Kennewick Man The skull and bones of a man who lived more than 9,000 years ago were discovered in 1996 near Kennewick, Washington. Archaeologists realized that these remains were very rare.

Some wanted to have the opportunity to study them. Native Americans from around the region wanted to rebury the man they called the Ancient One and respected as an ancestor. Disagreements about what to do with Kennewick Man have continued through the years. His remains are currently being held at the Burke Museum in Seattle. [File 10741: Full Text >](#)

p. 78 and 79 – Clovis points/Richey Clovis Cache

[Moises Aguirre and Mark Mickles discover prehistoric Clovis point artifacts in an East Wenatchee apple orchard on May 27, 1987.](#) On May 27, 1987, while installing an irrigation sprinkler pipe through an apple orchard on Grant Road in East Wenatchee near the Columbia River, orchard workers Moises Aguirre and Mark Mickles uncover a cache of 11,000-to 12,000-year-old prehistoric tools known as Clovis points buried about 20 inches below the surface. Clovis points are spearheads that were used by prehistoric peoples to hunt. The discovery excites scientific interest worldwide but raises concerns among members of the Colville Tribe. Portions of the site will be excavated in 1988 and 1990. After each dig the pits will be back-filled and protected from intrusion by four-ton concrete slabs. [File 7966: Full Text >](#)

[Emanuel Manis finds mastodon tusks in Sequim on August 8, 1977.](#) On August 8, 1977, Emanuel "Manny" Manis (1926-2000) unearths mastodon tusks while excavating a dry peat bog on his property on the southern outskirts of Sequim, Clallam County. The typically marshy area is dry due to a drought that summer, and conditions are ideal for Manis's intentions of digging out a smaller area within the bog to create a permanent pond. His backhoe begins bringing up what at first appear to be old logs. He and his wife Clare soon realize they are looking not at logs, but at tusks nearly eight feet long. They contact archaeology and paleontology experts who begin excavation of the site, confirming that the tusks and other bones are those of a mastodon preserved in the wet peat for 13,000 to 14,000 years. An unrelated bone they soon find embedded in a rib, if indeed a spear tip, provides the first evidence that humans interacted with these prehistoric proboscidian mammals that resemble our elephant (but with molar teeth of a different structure). [File 8511: Full Text >](#)

HistoryLink Elementary: Prehistoric Tools and Weapons Archaeological finds in various locations across Washington have helped scientists learn about how the earliest residents of this state lived. [File 10744: Full Text >](#)

p. 76-79 – Migration

p. 83-97 – Coastal Tribes

Cascade (Coastal)

Chehalis Confederated (Coastal)

[Secretary of the Interior J. P. Usher creates the Confederated Tribes of the Chehalis Reservation on July 8, 1864.](#) On July 8, 1864, Secretary of the Interior J. P. Usher creates the Confederated Tribes of the Chehalis Reservation, located at the confluence of the Black and Chehalis rivers in southwestern Washington Territory. Usher's directive reserves 4,224.63 acres for the Upper and Lower Chehalis. Some of the Chehalis move onto the reservation, while others remain living amongst American settlers. [File 8533: Full Text >](#)

Chinook (Coastal)

Astorians trade with Chinook and Clatsop Indians in April 1811. During the first weeks of April 1811, members of the Pacific Fur Company trade with the local Chinook and Clatsop Indians while a small party scouts the north shore of the Columbia River and journeys upstream in search of a suitable building site for the first American trading post on the Columbia. The Astorians, as they are known, are the vanguard of a new business enterprise by fur baron John Jacob Astor (1763-1848) of New York. Astor intends to establish a commercial fur empire in the Northwest as well as a transcontinental trade network between the Missouri and the Pacific coast. [File 8675: Full Text >](#)

Clallam (Coastal)

S'Klallam tribe receives a reservation on Port Gamble Bay on June 16, 1938. On June 16, 1938, the S'Klallam tribe receives a 1,234-acre reservation on Port Gamble Bay, which is their historic home. [File 5509: Full Text >](#)

Cowlitz (Coastal)

Duwamish (Coastal)

Seattle pioneers petition against a reservation on the Black River for the Duwamish tribe in 1866. In 1866, King County settlers petition the Territorial Delegate to Congress, Arthur Denny (1822-1899), against the establishment of a reservation for the Duwamish tribe on the Black River. The Superintendent of Indian Affairs had proposed such a reservation to correct deficiencies in the Point Elliott Treaty of 1855. The pioneer's petition is forwarded to the Bureau of Indian Affairs and the reservation is not established. There are about 156 signatures, all or nearly all King County residents, including Chas. C. Terry (first signature), John Denny, D. T. Denny, H. L. Yesler, D. S. Maynard, Chas Plummer, Jacob Maple, and J. P. Pinnell. [File 2955: Full Text >](#)

Descendants of pioneers reverse the stand of their ancestors and support federal recognition of the Duwamish Tribe on June 18, 1988. On June 18, 1988, 72 descendants of Washington settlers reverse their ancestors and petition the Bureau of Indian Affairs in support of federal recognition of the Duwamish Tribe. [File 2956: Full Text >](#)

Duwamish Tribe wins federal recognition on January 19, 2001, but loses it again two days later. On January 19, 2001, the Duwamish Tribe wins federal recognition. However, fewer than 48 hours later, the tribe learns that President George W. Bush has suspended a batch of President Clinton's 11th-hour orders, including federal recognition of the Duwamish. The Duwamish were the indigenous inhabitants of the Seattle area. They have been seeking recognition since 1979, when U.S. District Judge George Boldt (1903-1984) found that the tribe had not existed continuously as an organized tribe (within the meaning of federal law) from 1855 to the present, and was therefore ineligible for treaty fishing rights. [File 2951: Full Text >](#)

Seattle's Duwamish Tribe celebrates new Longhouse and Cultural Center on January 3, 2009. On January 3, 2009, members and descendants of Seattle's First People, the Duwamish Tribe, held a Grand

Opening ceremony at their beautiful new Duwamish Longhouse and Cultural Center (4705 West Marginal Way SW), which is situated at a traditional riverside village site. [File 8894: Full Text >](#)

Hansen, Cecile: Tribal Chairwoman of Seattle's Duwamish Peoples Cecile Ann Hansen -- a descendant within the family of Chief Si 'ahl ("Chief Seattle") -- has served as the elected chair of her people since 1975. During those decades the Duwamish (or in the Salish language of Lushootseed: the Dkhw'Duw'Absh) have made much progress in the ongoing efforts to nurture their arts, language, and culture. But Hansen's original goal -- and the driving imperative behind her sustained efforts ever since -- has simply been to "correct an injustice." Or more precisely: a multitude of injustices that have faced the Duwamish -- ranging from the initial loss of their traditional lands (the town site of Seattle and much of King County) via the Point Elliot Treaty of 1855, to the loss of their fishing rights along the Duwamish River, to the even more tragic refusal of the federal government to grant them official recognition as a legitimate historic tribe. [File 8963: Full Text >](#)

Hoh (Coastal)

Humptulip (Coastal)

Jameston S'Klallam (Coastal)

Kwalniokwa (Coastal)

Lower Chehalis (Coastal)

Lummi (Coastal)

Makah (Coastal)

Makah Whaling In 1999 and 2000, after a hiatus of seven decades, Makah Indian whalers again hunted gray whales from their ancestral lands around Cape Flattery on the Olympic Peninsula. The Makah, whose whaling tradition dates back thousands of years, are the only tribe in the United States with a treaty guaranteeing the right to hunt whales. Makahs had not whaled since the 1920s, when commercial whaling nearly wiped out whale populations, but the tribe announced it would resume whaling after the gray whale was removed from the Endangered Species List in 1994. The decision ignited worldwide controversy. Some animal rights activists bitterly denounced the Makah, but other groups, from advocates for indigenous rights to the United States government, supported the tribe's right to hunt. Following legal battles and physical confrontations with protestors, Makah whalers landed their first whale in more than 70 years on May 17, 1999. A 2000 hunt was not successful, and court decisions put further authorized hunts on hold (although five whalers killed a whale without permission in 2007) as the Makah, who continue to assert their treaty right to hunt whales, seek federal approval to continue their tradition. [File 5301: Full Text >](#)

Makah Tribe successfully challenges state regulation of treaty fishing rights in 1951. In 1951, the Makah Tribe successfully challenges state regulation of their nets on the Hoko River. (The Hoko River runs into the Strait of Juan de Fuca on the north coast of the Olympic Peninsula about 15 miles east of Cape Flattery.) [File 2594: Full Text >](#)

Makah whale hunt succeeds on May 17, 1999. On May 17, 1999, for the first time in more than 70 years, Makah whalers successfully hunt a gray whale in the waters off the Olympic Peninsula, where their ancestors hunted whales for thousands of years. Killing the whale unleashes a storm of protest from animal

rights activists who have worked in court and on the open seas to stop the Makah from whaling, but Makah leaders see the successful hunt as a further step in revitalizing their culture. Makah families hunt whales again in 2000, without success, and then court decisions put the revived whaling on hold. [File 5310: Full Text >](#)

Makah whalers harpoon and shoot a gray whale in an unauthorized hunt on September 8, 2007. On September 8, 2007, five Makah whalers harpoon and then shoot a gray whale in the Strait of Juan de Fuca off their reservation on the Olympic Peninsula. The whale hunt, conducted without permission from the Makah tribe or the federal government, comes eight years after a Makah whaling crew, including some of the same men, conducted a successful, and legal, whale hunt for the first time since the 1920s. Since that brief success, court challenges by whaling opponents have stymied the Makahs' efforts to exercise the right to hunt whales guaranteed by the 1855 Treaty of Neah Bay. Frustrated by the delays and what they see as violation of their treaty rights and religious freedom, the five whalers succeed in catching the whale, but are detained by the Coast Guard before they can bring it to shore. The dead whale is allowed to sink to the bottom of the strait and the hunters are condemned not only by animal-rights activists but also by tribal leaders. [File 9136: Full Text >](#)

Makah whalers harpoon and shoot a gray whale in an unauthorized hunt on September 8, 2007. On September 8, 2007, five Makah whalers harpoon and then shoot a gray whale in the Strait of Juan de Fuca off their reservation on the Olympic Peninsula. The whale hunt, conducted without permission from the Makah tribe or the federal government, comes eight years after a Makah whaling crew, including some of the same men, conducted a successful, and legal, whale hunt for the first time since the 1920s. Since that brief success, court challenges by whaling opponents have stymied the Makahs' efforts to exercise the right to hunt whales guaranteed by the 1855 Treaty of Neah Bay. Frustrated by the delays and what they see as violation of their treaty rights and religious freedom, the five whalers succeed in catching the whale, but are detained by the Coast Guard before they can bring it to shore. The dead whale is allowed to sink to the bottom of the strait and the hunters are condemned not only by animal-rights activists but also by tribal leaders. [File 9136: Full Text >](#)

HistoryLink Elementary: Makah Whaling The culture and lifestyle of the Makah Indians is based on the sea. Their homeland is on the Olympic Peninsula in northwestern Washington, along the shore of the Strait of Juan de Fuca and the coastline of the Pacific Ocean. They have hunted gray whales for thousands of years. The tribe used every part of the whale as food, to make all sorts of needed items, and to trade. When Makah leaders signed the Treaty of Neah Bay in 1855, they were promised that they could continue to fish and hunt for whales. But professional whalers hunted gray whales until they were almost extinct. The gray whale was placed on the Endangered Species list and the Makah were not allowed to hunt it. In 1999, Makah whalers conducted a traditional whale hunt and landed a whale. Many in the tribe had not tasted fresh whale blubber before. Since then, the whale hunts have been stopped until new studies on the environment can be completed. [File 10739: Full Text >](#)

Muckleshoot (Coastal)

Muckleshoot Indian Tribe The Muckleshoot Indian tribe is an amalgam of several Native American tribes that have inhabited the region surrounding the White and Green rivers for centuries. Located on a six square mile reservation between Auburn and Enumclaw, the tribe numbers in the thousands, and employs most of its members through fisheries, gaming, small business, and tribal government. [File 3636: Full Text >](#)

Northwest Indian canoes return to site of Point Elliott Treaty on July 26, 2007. On July 26, 2007, about 40 tribal canoes from Puget Sound, the Washington coast, and Vancouver Island land at Lighthouse Park in Mukilteo south of Everett as part of the 2007 Intertribal Canoe Journey. The landing and the traditional celebration that follows are the largest intertribal gathering at the site, also known as Point Elliott, since January 22, 1855, when 82 leaders of Puget Sound tribes signed the Treaty of Point Elliott, giving up almost all their land in return for small reservations and perpetual fishing and hunting rights. The tribal canoe journey, an annual event since the 1989 "Paddle to Seattle," will end four days later near Bellingham, where the Lummi Nation will host a week-long potlatch ceremony. [File 8269: Full Text >](#)

Song-Catchers: Documenting the Music of Northwest Indians Music played a deeply spiritual role in the lives of the Pacific Northwest's First Peoples for eons prior to the beginning of recorded time. Much of this age-old music has survived by being passed down through oral tradition. But the documentation of these tunes -- whether via the literary descriptions of early explorers and settlers or via written transcriptions and audio recordings made by ethnomusicologists and anthropologists -- provides a unique angle from which to consider this history. [File 7565: Full Text >](#)

Nisqually

Nisqually Chief Leschi is hanged on February 19, 1858. On February 19, 1858, Nisqually Chief Leschi (1808-1858) is hanged on a gallows at Fort Steilacoom, for the "murder" of the American soldier Colonel A. Benton Moses. Chief Leschi's attorneys argued firstly that Leschi had not actually been the one to kill Colonel Moses, and secondly that Colonel Moses was killed during warfare (in which there were casualties on both sides), requiring that his accused killer should not be tried in a civilian court. On March 4, 2004, the Washington State Senate formally recognized "the injustice which occurred in 1858 with the trial and execution of Chief Leschi" and honored Chief Leschi as "a courageous leader" and "a great and noble man" (Washington State Senate Resolution 8727). [File 5145: Full Text >](#)

Frank, Billy, Jr. (b. 1931) Billy Frank Jr. has served as chair of the Northwest Indian Fisheries Commission (NWIFC) for most of the past 30 years. He has committed his life to protecting his Nisqually people's traditional way of life and to protecting the endangered salmon whose survival is the focus of tribal life. Beginning with his first arrest as a teenager in 1945 for "illegal" fishing on his beloved Nisqually River, he became a leader of a civil disobedience movement that insisted on the treaty rights (the right to fish in "usual and accustomed places") guaranteed to Washington tribes more than a century before. The "fish-ins" and demonstrations Billy Frank Jr. helped lead in the 1960s and 1970s, along with accompanying law suits, led to the Boldt decision of 1974, which restored to the federally recognized tribes the legal right to fish as they always had. Following the Boldt decision, Frank has been a leader in the work to save the river and its fish. In part due to his continuing leadership, Native Americans have finally been recognized as the country's first environmentalists. Billy Frank Jr., who has been honored with national and international humanitarian awards, overcame personal tragedies to help save a precious resource, not only for his people, but for the broader society that was heedlessly destroying it. [File 8929: Full Text >](#)

Native Americans rebury Chief Leschi on tribal land on July 4, 1895. On July 4, 1895, the body of Nisqually Chief Leschi (1808-1858) is reburied on the Nisqually Reservation in Pierce County south of Tacoma. One thousand people, mostly Native Americans representing the Nisqually, Puyallup, Muckleshoot, Black River, Green River, and White River tribes attend the ceremony. [File 5480: Full Text >](#)

Nooksack (Coastal)

Ozette (Coastal)

Port Gamble S'Klallam (Coastal)

Puyallup (Coastal)

Quileute (Coastal)

Quinalt (Coastal)

DeLaCruz, Joseph "Joe" Burton (1937-2000) Joseph "Joe" Burton DeLaCruz Jr., long-serving president of the Quinalt Indian Nation, brought intelligence and charisma to the struggle to bring effective self-governance to his tribe and to Indians across the country. Although his tenure from 1967 to 1993 was not without controversy and criticism, DeLaCruz built a formidable record of accomplishment, tackling such tough and long-standing issues as access to reservation lands by non-Natives, fisheries and logging management, and, perhaps most notably, the status and role of Indian tribes within the American body politic. He was at the forefront of most late-twentieth-century struggles involving the status and rights of Native Americans, among them issues of resource management, education, economic diversity, governance, and tribal culture. While participating in these skirmishes, DeLaCruz never lost sight of what he considered to be the single overarching issue for Native Americans -- giving substance to the concept of tribal sovereignty. [File 9877: Full Text >](#)

Salish

Samish Nation (Coastal)

Satsop (Coastal)

Sauk-Suiattle (Coastal)

Semiahmoo (Coastal)

Semiahmoo People The Semiahmoo were a band of Native Americans who lived in the Blaine and Birch Bay area (future Whatcom County) in the centuries prior to European settlement. Culturally and linguistically a Straits Salish band, they were distinguished from many other area tribes because they fished with reef nets, catching thousands of salmon yearly this way off Point Roberts and Birch Point. In the early 1850s most of the Semiahmoo moved a short distance north of Blaine, only a few years before the first non-Indian settlers arrived; this move was just far enough north to place them in Canada when the U.S.-Canadian boundary was drawn in the late 1850s. Today (2009) many of the remaining Semiahmoo live in the Semiahmoo Indian Reserve, just northwest of the Canadian side of Peace Arch Park. [File 9123: Full Text >](#)

Shoalwater Bay (Coastal)

Skokomish (Coastal)

Snoqualmie (Coastal)

Arthur Ballard records and translates the Snoqualmie tribe's legend of Moon the Transformer beginning in 1916. Beginning in 1916, Anthropologist Arthur C. Ballard (1876-1962) records and translates the Snoqualmie tribe's legend of Moon the Transformer, who creates Snoqualmie Falls and

transforms the Dog Salmon. This is a compressed retelling of the story as collected by Ballard from Snuqualmie Charlie (sia:txted) (b. ca. 1850). [File 2586: Full Text >](#)

Arthur Ballard records and translates the Snoqualmie Tribe's legend of origin of the Tolt River beginning in 1916. Beginning in 1916, Anthropologist Arthur C. Ballard (1876-1962) records and translates the Snoqualmie tribe's legend regarding the origin of the Tolt River. This file contains the story as related to Ballard by Snuqualmie Charlie (sia:txted) (b. ca. 1850). [File 2587: Full Text >](#)

Arthur Ballard records and translates the Snoqualmie Tribe's legend of origin of the Humpback Salmon beginning in 1916. Beginning in 1916, Anthropologist Arthur C. Ballard (1876-1962) records and translates the Snoqualmie tribe's legend regarding the origin of the Humpback Salmon. This file contains the story as related to Ballard by Snuqualmie Charlie (sia:txted) (b. ca. 1850). [File 2589: Full Text >](#)

Arthur Ballard records and translates Native American legends of Puget Sound in 1916. In 1916, Arthur C. Ballard (1876-1962) begins collecting the legends of the Duwamish, Muckleshoot, Snoqualmie, and other tribes of Puget Sound, and translates them into English. By interviewing tribal members, he is able to capture the oral traditions and their variations, in the style that they were spoken. [File 2563: Full Text >](#)

Arthur Ballard records and translates the legend of origin of the North Wind Weir on the Duwamish River beginning in 1916. Beginning in 1916, Anthropologist Arthur C. Ballard (1876-1962) records and translates the Native American legend regarding the origin of the rocks in the Duwamish River known as North Wind Weir. This file contains the story of North Wind Weir compiled from several versions. [File 2590: Full Text >](#)

Federal government recognizes the Snoqualmie Tribe on October 6, 1999. On October 6, 1999, the federal government formally recognizes the Snoqualmie tribe. Federal status means that the United States recognizes the Snoqualmies as a sovereign government, and it makes the tribe eligible for numerous federal programs and possibly a reservation. [File 2458: Full Text >](#)

Snoqualmie Casino holds Grand Opening on November 6, 2008. At 10:00 p.m. on the Thursday evening, November 6, 2008, the Snoqualmie Casino holds its Grand Opening event. Located 30 miles east of downtown Seattle, the 170,000-square-foot facility features a 51,000-square-foot gaming floor, an 11,000-square-foot ballroom, a nightclub, a fine dining restaurant, a cigar lounge, and a six-level parking garage. The casino -- a dream project for the Snoqualmie Tribe -- is also one that was a long time in the making. [File 9548: Full Text >](#)

Borst, Kate (1855-1938) Kate Kanim Borst was a Native American woman who was the third wife of Snoqualmie Valley settler, Jeremiah Borst. During her lifetime, she witnessed the transformation of the valley from prairies and Indian encampments to the beginnings of suburbia. [File 294: Full Text >](#)

Squaxin Island (Coastal)

Stillaguamish (Coastal)

Suquamish (Coastal)

Swinomish (Coastal)

Tulalip (Coastal)

Tulalip Tribes The Tulalip Tribes is a federally recognized Indian tribe located on the Tulalip Reservation north of Everett and west of Marysville. Reservation boundaries set by the Point Elliott Treaty of 1855 gave a permanent home to the Snohomish, Snoqualmie, Skykomish, Stillaguamish, and related tribes "Dxwilep," the Coast Salish word, means small-mouthed bay. In 1857 Roman Catholic missionary Eugene Casimir Chirouse (1821-1892) established St. Anne' Mission and boys' school at Tulalip and was joined by the Sisters of Providence who added a girls' school in 1868. A government-run Indian boarding school followed from 1900 to its closure in 1932. Since 1936 the Tulalip Tribes has had its own tribal council and is currently self-governing. Historically gaining sustenance from fishing, the Tulalips have profited most in recent years from their success in real estate and the casino business, which provide jobs primarily for tribal members. Today the Tulalip Reservation has a population of 9,000 (3,600 tribal members) and a land base of 22,086 acres. [File 8852: Full Text >](#)

Tulalip Tribes Cybertour This cybertour combines a look at both the history and present-day enterprise of the Tulalip Tribes. It was written by Margaret Riddle, curated by Priscilla Long, with maps by Marie McCaffrey. It was funded by Tulalip Charitable Contributions. "We respect the community of our elders past and present, and pay attention to their good words."
--Tulalip Tribes Value Statement. [File 9151: Full Text >](#)

The Tulalip Tribes open Hibulb Cultural Center and Natural History Preserve on August 19, 2011. On Friday, August 19, 2011, the Hibulb Cultural Center, located on the Tulalip Indian Reservation in Snohomish County west of Marysville, opens to tribal members and invited guests. It opens to the general public the following day. Decades in the planning, the \$19 million center, designed by StastnyBrun Architects of Portland, is a 23,000-square-foot building with a 10,000-square-foot collections wing and a 42-acre natural history preserve. [File 10024: Full Text >](#)

Shelton, William (1868-1938) Storyteller, wood carver, teacher, and Tulalip cultural leader, William Shelton Wha-cah-dub, Whea-kadim earned great respect in his lifetime from both Indians and whites -- the two cultures that he loved and sought to bring together -- and was a key figure in the preservation of Coast Salish culture. Gaining permission from the U.S. government to carve a story pole in 1912, Shelton collected Lushootseed sklaletut stories from many regional tribal elders and carved pole figures representing many of their stories. In his lifetime, he carved four story poles and published these stories in book format. In the 1920s and 1930s William Shelton was a sought-after performer for club meetings, school classes, fairs, and regional radio where he became a spokesman for American Indian culture, often dressing in Great Plains ceremonial garb complete with feathered headdress, clothing he claimed would be most easily recognized as Indian. Shelton's title of chief was as Tulalip Chief of Police but his works made him a cultural leader. So important was he to the preservation of Tulalip tribal tradition that upon his death, many feared the culture would vanish with him. Instead his accomplishments served as the bridge for following generations who found new ways to continue his work. [File 8928: Full Text >](#)

Dover, Harriette Shelton Williams (1904-1991) Daughter of Chief William Shelton -- the famed Tulalip storyteller, wood-carver, and cultural leader -- Harriette Shelton Williams Dover, followed her father's fine example and invested her entire adult life into efforts to reintroduce various traditional aspects and practices of their native heritage. Among Harriette's many accomplishments was that of helping revive traditional dances, the Lushootseed language, and tribal appreciation for a proud past. In addition, Harriette served as the second female elected to the Tulalip Tribes' Board of Directors (and first Tribal Council Chairwoman), and she took a lead role in reestablishing the ancient First Salmon Ceremony at Tulalip -- the now-thriving reservation located just west of Marysville and north of Everett. [File 9079: Full Text >](#)

Gobin, Bernie (1930-2009) Bernie "Kai Kai" Gobin (his Indian name means "blue jay" or "wise one") was a fisherman, artist, musician, and political leader on the Tulalip Reservation, where he lived most of his life. Gobin's formal schooling ended in seventh grade but he never stopped learning and teaching the traditional knowledge of the Snohomish and other Salish peoples who make up the Tulalip Tribes. His many activities were ultimately devoted to the same fundamental goal -- preserving and passing on his Indian heritage. Gobin's father taught him to carve and paint, and in addition to creating drums, masks, rattles, and other ceremonial artifacts, Gobin taught his sons and others to carve too. Gobin was a successful politician and administrator, serving for many years on the Board of Directors that governs the Tulalip Tribes and in other tribal government posts. A commercial fisherman himself, Gobin was particularly active in the dual struggle to reclaim treaty fishing rights and to protect and rebuild declining salmon runs. Gobin led the effort to build a fish hatchery owned and run by the Tulalip Tribes, which was later named in his honor. [File 9070: Full Text >](#)

Jules, Charles (Schay nam'kin) (1846-1935) Chief Charles Jules (Schay nam'kin) was held in high regard by members of the Snohomish and related bands that would eventually become the Tulalip Tribes, as well as by his white contemporaries. Jules's position as chief was both hereditary and appointive. His grandfather, Sehi-ham-kin, had been chief at Hebolb (Hibulb), the Snohomish first-class village on the northwestern tip of present-day Everett, and an uncle, Ns'ski-oos, or Jackson, was sub-chief of Snohomish and signed the Point Elliott Treaty in 1855. Jules served as judge of the Tulalip court for seven years and as sub-chief. The U.S. government appointed him chief of the Snohomish in 1905. Jules and Ns'ski-oos met Father Eugene Casimir Chirouse (1821-1892) upon his arrival at the Tulalip Reservation in 1857 and helped Chirouse select a location for his first mission, school, and residence. Charles Jules became a student at the mission boarding school and he and Chirouse became friends. When Chirouse moved the Mission of St. Anne from Priest Point to Tulalip Bay in 1863, he aided Jules financially and give him land at the Priest Point site. Jules excelled at business -- he operated a general store and engaged in logging -- and at age 32 he was able to live on the reservation in semi-retirement. He owned 160 acres of reservation land and leased some of it out for income. Twice married, Charles Jules fathered 15 children. Jules died on the Tulalip reservation on September 2, 1935. [File 9161: Full Text >](#)

Moses, Marya D. (1911-2006) Marya D. Moses was raised within a Native American tribal culture that since time immemorial had included roles for *both* men and women to contribute to the gathering and preparing of salmon from local rivers and the rich waters of Puget Sound. But by the mid-twentieth century, the job of fishing amongst tribal members had effectively been monopolized by males. Until, that is, Moses emerged as a pioneering female commercial fisherwoman working from the Tulalip Indian Reservation in Snohomish County. Beyond setting that modern-day precedent however, Moses -- a bright and feisty individual (who even described herself in various interviews as "aggressive," "excitable," "mouthy," and "ornery") -- also achieved numerous other accomplishments throughout her long life. Among them are: the mothering of 11 children; serving as a member of the Tulalip Tribes' Board of Directors; becoming a published writer; and playing a key role in saving her native Lushootseed language from extinction. In addition, Moses had a stellar memory for historical detail. In the 1989 book, *Winds of Change*, she admitted that "I remember lots of stuff way back -- *ahn-ka-tee* -- that's Chinook for 'long ago.'" [File 9134: Full Text >](#)

Twana (Coastal)

Upper Skagit (Coastal)

Hilbert, Vi (1918-2008) Vi Hilbert, a member of the Upper Skagit tribe, had as her life's work to preserve the Lushootseed (Puget Salish) language and culture. Vi learned Lushootseed (the language of Chief Seattle) as a child, listening to her parents. This recollected knowledge allowed her to help the linguist

Thomas Hess transcribe and translate early Lushootseed recordings of elders, including Vi's folks. With delight, Vi quickly learned to read and write this oral language. She went on to teach the Lushootseed language and literature (traditional stories) at the University of Washington. She co-wrote Lushootseed grammars and dictionaries, and published books of stories, teachings, and place names. Vi taught hundreds of students, inspiring a few to become Lushootseed teachers and others to support and further her work. She generously shared Lushootseed language, stories, and traditions with organizations such as the Burke Museum, the Seattle Art Museum, United Indians of All Tribes, Tillicum Village, Seattle Storytellers Guild, and the National Storytelling Association. Vi brings out Lushootseed with every audience she addressed, especially traditional gatherings, so that this ancient language can be heard throughout Puget Sound, where it has been spoken for centuries. Vi Hilbert passed away at her home in LaConner on the morning of December 19, 2008. [File 7130: Full Text >](#)

p. 98- 107 - PLATEAU TRIBES

p. Horses –

- **European horses arrive on the Columbia plateau in the early 1700s.** In the early 1700s, European horses arrive on the Columbian plateau, having moved north through tribal trade networks from Pueblo villages located in present-day New Mexico. The Plateau tribes, who formerly traveled by foot or by canoe, will gradually adopt this new form of transportation, which will transform many of their traditional lifeways. [File 9433: Full Text >](#)

HistoryLink Elementary: Horses Change Life on the Columbia Plateau Hundreds of years ago, the Native Americans who lived in Washington's Columbia Plateau region had no means of traveling on land other than walking. That all changed when local Indian groups began to acquire horses. Horses allowed tribes to travel farther and faster to gather food, hunt, and trade. Tribes placed great value on their horses. [File 10748: Full Text >](#)

Chelan (Plateau)

Columbia (Plateau)

Chief Moses (1829-1899) Chief Moses was the leader of the Columbia band of Indians, who gave his name to both Moses Lake and Moses Coulee. He was born in 1829, the son of a chief of this Central Washington tribe. His father sent him off at age 10 to Rev. Henry Spalding's Christian mission at Lapwai, Idaho, to learn Christianity and the white man's ways. Moses received his Christian name there, but was never baptized. He soon returned to his own people and as a young man came to be known as a brave warrior, a fierce opponent of white intrusion, and an influential leader. During the Indian wars and subsequent reservation negotiations, he emerged as one of the most influential tribal leaders in the entire Inland Northwest. Many white settlers distrusted Chief Moses -- he was accused of murder several times -- yet for decades he maintained a careful balance between friendliness and resistance, always stopping short of outright hostility. He went to Washington D.C. twice, where he signed two treaties and shook the hand of a U.S. president. However, his dream of a permanent reservation encompassing his mid-Columbia River homeland was thwarted on several occasions. He and his tribe eventually moved on to the Colville Reservation, north of the Columbia. He was an influential leader on the reservation and helped the defeated Chief Joseph (1840-1904) and his Nez Perce band to settle there. He died at the age of 70, recognized -- grudgingly, in some cases -- as a powerful, stalwart diplomat for his people. [File 8870: Full Text >](#)

Smohalla (1815?-1895) A Wanapum spiritual leader, Smohalla founded what became known as the Dreamer religion, which was based on the belief that if Native Americans shunned white culture and lived

as their ancestors had lived, the Creator would reward them by bringing dead Indians back to life and ridding Indian lands of white people. His teachings spread rapidly among Columbia Plateau peoples in the late nineteenth century. To tribes which had been decimated by disease, pushed out of their traditional homelands, and otherwise dispirited by white encroachment, Smohalla offered hope for a restoration of freedom and dignity. To many whites, however, he represented a dangerous threat, not only to white expansion but to efforts to "civilize" the Indians. Widely feared and vilified in his own time, a century later he was installed in Washington's Centennial Hall of Honor as one of the 100 most influential people in state history. [File 9481: Full Text >](#)

Wanapum People After Smohalla In the 1850s, the Wanapum people were living peacefully at their village of P'na near the foot of Priest Rapids, on the Columbia River, where they practiced their Washani religion under the guidance of the prophet Smohalla (1815?-1895). They were painfully aware of what was going on all around them but managed to keep their distance and were little noticed. Isaac Stevens (1818-1862), the newly appointed governor of Washington Territory, was apparently not aware of their existence as a separate group. Being lumped together with other tribes of the mid-Columbia they, like the Chief Moses Band of Columbians (Sinkiuse), were expected to move onto the Yakama Reservation following the treaty of 1855. But, also like the Columbians, none of their leaders signed the Yakama Treaty. Unlike the Columbians, however, the Wanapum were not numerous and lived in a relatively small and isolated geographical area, although they continued to travel to far-flung subsistence sites. Whereas the Columbians were considered an impediment to white settlement in the central Columbia Basin country, the Wanapum were considered to be harmless by the few whites that settle in the Priest Rapids vicinity. The most obvious consequence of these differing perceptions was that the Columbians lost their ancestral lands and were eventually relocated on the Colville Reservation, while the Wanapum continued to dwell near their ancient village site at P'na. [File 9524: Full Text >](#)

Colville (Plateau)

Entiat (Plateau)

Kalispel (Plateau)

David Thompson visits Kalispel Indians on Pend Oreille River in June 1811. In early June, 1811, David Thompson (1770-1857), Canadian explorer, geographer, and fur trader, visits a village of Kalispel Indians on the Pend Oreille River, then travels to Spokane House, the North West Company's trading post at the confluence of the Spokane and Little Spokane Rivers, approximately nine miles west of the present city of Spokane. Thompson, a partner with the North West Company of Montreal, has recently pioneered a new trade route across Athabasca Pass in the Canadian Rockies, and brings fresh trade goods for Spokane House. During a four-day visit, he trades with local Spokane bands and makes astronomical observations to calculate the latitude and longitude of the post. [File 8676: Full Text >](#)

Kittitas (Plateau)

Klickitat (Plateau)

Lakes (Plateau)

Meshal (Plateau)

Methow (Plateau)

David Thompson records first written description of the Methow Indians and landscape along the Columbia between Nespelem Canyon and the mouth of the Wenatchee on July 6, 1811. On July 6, 1811, Canadian explorer David Thompson (1770 - 1857) records the first written description of the Methow Indians and the landscape along the Columbia River from Nespelem Canyon to the mouth of the Wenatchee River (present-day Ferry and Okanogan counties). Thompson embarked from Kettle Falls on July 3 on a historic voyage down the Columbia River to the Pacific. In addition to his work as a geographer, Thompson is the fur agent in charge of the Columbia Department of the North West Company of Canada. He is on a mission to determine whether the Columbia is navigable to the sea and whether it will provide a viable trade route for the fur company. Thompson is the first white man to descend the river and make contact with tribes between Kettle Falls and the mouth of the Snake River, where he intersects the route of Lewis and Clark from five years earlier. His crew includes French Canadian voyageurs Pierre Pareil and Joseph Cote, translator Michel Boulard, and free hunters Michel Bourdeaux and Francois Gregoire. Two Iroquois Indians called Charles and Ignace paddle at the bow and stern. [File 9008: Full Text >](#)

Nespelem (Plateau)

David Thompson records the first written description of the Nespelem Indians and landscape along the Columbia from the mouth of the Sanpoil through Nespelem Canyon on July 4 and 5, 1811. On July 4-5, 1811, Canadian explorer David Thompson (1770-1857) records the first written description of the Nespelem Indians and the landscape along the Columbia River from the mouth of the Sanpoil River through Nespelem Canyon (modern-day Ferry and Okanogan counties). Thompson embarked from Kettle Falls on July 3 on a historic voyage down the Columbia River to the Pacific. In addition to his scientific work as a geographer, he is the fur agent in charge of the Columbia Department of the North West Company of Canada. He is on a mission to determine whether the Columbia is navigable to the sea and whether it will provide a viable trade route for the fur company. Thompson is the first white man to descend the river and make contact with tribes between Kettle Falls and the mouth of the Snake River, where he intersects the route of Lewis and Clark from five years earlier. His crew includes French Canadian voyageurs Pierre Pareil and Joseph Cote, translator Michel Boulard, and free hunters Michel Bourdeaux and Francois Gregoire. Two Iroquois Indians called Charles and Ignace paddle at the bow and stern. [File 9007: Full Text >](#)

Nez Perce (Plateau)

Chief Joseph (1840-1904) Chief Joseph (1840-1904) was a leader of the Wallowa band of the Nez Perce Tribe, who became famous in 1877 for leading his people on an epic flight across the Rocky Mountains. He was born in 1840 and he was called Joseph by Reverend Henry H. Spalding (1803-1874), who had established a mission amongst the Nez Perce in 1836. Young Joseph and his father soon returned to their traditional ways in their Wallowa homeland in Oregon. When Joseph grew up and assumed the chieftanship, he was under increasing governmental pressure to abandon his Wallowa land and join the rest of the Nez Perce on their reservation near Lapwai, Idaho. Joseph refused, saying that he had promised his father he would never leave. In 1877, these disputes erupted into violence and Joseph's band, along with other Nez Perce bands, fled across the Bitterroot Mountains into Montana, with federal troops in pursuit. Joseph was by no means the military leader of the group, yet his standing in the tribe made him the camp chief and the group's political leader. It was Joseph who finally surrendered the decimated band to federal troops near the Canadian border in Montana. Joseph and the tribe were taken to a reservation in Indian Territory in present day Oklahoma, where they remained until 1885 when they were sent to the Colville Reservation in North Central Washington. Joseph made several visits to Washington, D.C., to plead for a return to the Wallowa country, but his pleas were in vain. Joseph died in 1904 in Nespelem, Washington, of what his doctor called "a broken heart." His tomb remains in Nespelem today. [File 8975: Full Text >](#)

Palouse (Plateau)

Step toe's Defeat: Battle of Tohotonimme (1858) The year 1858 was the seminal turning point in conflict between Native American tribes of the Pacific Northwest and the encroaching interests of the United States. Fur traders, missionaries, and gold seekers were followed by farmers and stock raisers, who continually enlarged their territories at the expense of the tribes. Tensions created by the situation caused the fearful white settlers to raise militias and, later, call on U.S. troops to protect them. In 1855, fighting erupted along Puget Sound, the Yakima Valley, and the Walla Walla Valley. Things had calmed down by 1858. So much so that Colonel Edward Steptoe (1816-1865) had no qualms about taking a small and lightly armed column of soldiers right through the heart of the Columbia Plateau Indian lands. His command was soundly thrashed at the Battle of Tohotonimme, a defeat that spurred a desire for retribution. Only a few months after the Steptoe debacle, Colonel George Wright (1803-1865) stormed through the Spokane Valley, a massive display of force that effectively removed the ability and the will of the Indians to resist. [File 8709: Full Text >](#)

San Poil (Plateau)

David Thompson records the first written description of the Sanpoil Indians and of the landscape along the Columbia between Kettle Falls and the mouth of the Sanpoil River on July 3, 1811. On July 3, 1811, Canadian explorer David Thompson (1770 - 1857) embarks from Kettle Falls on a historic voyage down the Columbia River to the Pacific. In addition to his scientific work as a geographer, Thompson is the fur agent in charge of the Columbia Department of the North West Company of Canada. He is on a mission to determine whether the Columbia is navigable to the sea and whether it will provide a viable trade route for the fur company. Thompson is the first white man to describe contact with the Sanpoil Indians and the Columbia River between Kettle Falls and the mouth of the Sanpoil River, located on the present-day Colville Indian Reservation, located in Okanogan and Ferry counties. [File 9006: Full Text >](#)

Spokane (Plateau)

Chief Spokane Garry (ca. 1811-1892) Chief Spokane Garry was a chief of the Spokane Tribe whose long, and ultimately tragic life spanned the fur-trading, missionary, and white settlement eras of the region. His father, also a Spokane chief, sent Garry off with fur traders at age 14 to be educated at the Red River Settlement's missionary school in Canada. Garry returned after five years, fluent in English and French, to become an influential leader and spokesman for his tribe. He opened a rough school to teach reading and writing and also taught his fellow tribesmen agricultural techniques. He participated in many peace councils, including those of 1855 and 1858, and was known as a steadfast advocate of peace and an equally steadfast advocate of a fair land settlement for his tribe. He never wavered on his insistence that the Spokane people should have the rights to their native lands along the Spokane River, a goal which proved unattainable. His own farm in what is now the Hillyard area of Spokane was stolen from him late in life and he and his sadly diminished band were forced to camp in Hangman Valley, where boys from the growing city of Spokane would throw rocks onto their tepees. A kindly landowner allowed Garry and his family to camp in Indian Canyon, where he lived out the rest of his life in poverty. He died there in 1892 and was buried in a pauper's grave. Decades later, a Spokane city park was named after him and a statue erected in his honor. [File 8713: Full Text >](#)

William Three Mountains the Elder and William Three Mountains the Younger William Three Mountains the Elder (ca. 1823-1883) and his son, William Three Mountains the Younger (1864-1937), served as important leaders of the Spokane tribe from the fur trade and missionary periods of the 1830s through the dam-building era of the 1930s. The Three Mountains name appears in documents relating to the 1858 Indian Wars, the treaty negotiations and reservation establishment of the 1880s, and the tribe's legal battles into the early twentieth century. They both were independent thinkers whose social and political

stances were sometimes at odds with the positions of other tribal leaders as well as those of white officials. Many of the difficult issues they confronted still resonate through the tribal world. [File 9523: Full Text >](#)

Peone, Baptiste (1820-1902?) Baptiste Peone was a chief of the Upper Spokane band of the Spokane Tribe. He was portrayed in Spokane news accounts as a most unusual kind of chief -- a wealthy, shrewd businessman. Yet for most of his life, his story revolves around more traditional themes. He was born around 1820, probably at the Spokane House, a fur-trading post, to a Spokane Indian mother and a French-Canadian trapper father. In 1848, he was picked by the Hudson's Bay Co. to establish a new trading post about two-thirds of the way along the trade route between Fort Colville and Lake Coeur d'Alene. He built a small post in a beautiful, lush prairie just a few miles northeast of present-day Spokane and before long became the chief of the Upper Spokane people who lived there. He lived on the prairie for most of the rest of his life, with his family and band, and was instrumental in assisting the Jesuits in establishing a mission there in 1866. His home site was famous for the white flag he raised at the top of an ancient ponderosa pine, to commemorate an Indian treaty. He apparently gained legal title to his land in the early 1880s, and then sold it. He and his family left soon after for the Flathead Reservation, where Peone died, probably around 1902. Yet the land where his cabin once stood is still named Peone Prairie and the Treaty Tree, minus the tattered flag, still towers above. [File 8550: Full Text >](#)

Spokane Tribe cedes 3.14 million acres of land to the United States on March 18, 1887. On March 18, 1887, the Spokane Tribe cedes 3.14 million acres of land to the United States for about 32 cents per acre. This ends attempts by members of the tribe to live among whites in the Spokane area. The tribe is assigned 154,898 acres as a reservation at the mouth of the Spokane River. In 1966, the tribe will accept a settlement of \$6.7 million for the land, which will be held in trust. [File 5163: Full Text >](#)

Taidnapah (Plateau)

Walla Walla (Plateau)

Wenatchi (Plateau)

Indians and non-Indians attend a historic powwow at Cashmere from August 20 to 22, 1931. A historic powwow held at Cashmere August 20 through 22, 1931, draws Indians and non-Indians from a wide area. The main organizers are J. Harold Anderson, a young Cashmere attorney who represented the Wenatchi Tribe, and Mark Balaban, one of the founders of the well-known Cashmere firm Aplets & Cotlets. Through John Harmelt (d. 1937), the last hereditary Wenatchi chief, Anderson has become increasingly aware of the unfair treatment of these Indians following Territorial Governor Isaac Stevens's Walla Walla Treaty of 1855, which deeded Wenatchi land, now part of the Wenatchee National Forest, to the Yakama Nation. Article X of the same treaty assures the Wenatchis of the continuation of their fishing rights by promising a fishery, the Wenatchapam (Wenatchapam) Fishery Reservation, at the confluence of Icicle Creek and the Wenatchee River at present Leavenworth. As an attempt to call attention to this unfulfilled treaty obligation to the Wenatchis, as well as to boost the economy of Cashmere area, Anderson, Balaban, the Chamber of Commerce, and local Indian leaders organize a "Grand Powwow and Historical Pageant." [File 9147: Full Text >](#)

Wishram (Plateau)

Yakama (Plateau)

Artist of Tribes

Sohon, Gustavus (1825-1903) Gustavus Sohon, a native of East Prussia, arrived on the Columbia River in 1852 as a private in the U.S. Army. During the following decade, he accompanied four historic expeditions across Eastern Washington -- the 1853-1854 Pacific railroad survey, the 1855 treaty tour of Governor Isaac Stevens (1818-1862), the 1858 military campaign of Colonel George Wright (1803-1865) against the Plateau tribes, and the construction of a transmontane wagon road by John Mullan from 1859 to 1862. A man of many talents, Sohon served as a guide, an interpreter, an explorer, and a cartographer, but he is best known as a self-taught artist whose surviving pencil sketches and watercolors of important figures and landmarks comprise valuable eyewitness records of a crucial transitional period in Inland Northwest history. [File 8593: Full Text >](#)

CHAPTER 4: SEA and LAND EXPLORERS, 1543-1806

p. 115 – Bartolome Ferrelo

Pacific Northwest Explorations Before the American Presence In A. D. 458, a Chinese adventurer named Hwui Shan crossed the Pacific to Mexico, and then followed the Japan current north to Alaska. Centuries later, in September 1513, Vasco Nunez de Balboa "discovered" the Pacific after struggling across the swampy Isthmus of Panama. Following that momentous event, Spain dispatched a number of legendary captains to the West Coast of North America, including Hernando Cortez, Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo, and Bartolome Ferrelo. In 1579, Britain's pirate Francis Drake sailed off the Oregon coast; during the early 1740s, Vitus Bering opened the North Pacific to Imperial Russia; during the late 1700s, English captains James Cook and George Vancouver charted the Pacific including the bays and inlets of Puget Sound (Vancouver); and in 1786, Comte de La Perouse, representing France, sailed to the Queen Charlotte islands. [File 5449: Full Text >](#)

p. 118 – Juan Perez

Spanish Exploration: Juan Perez Expedition of 1774 -- First European Discovery and Exploration of Washington State Coast and Nueva Galicia (the Pacific Northwest) Juan Perez (Juan Josef Perez Hernandez), sailing on the frigate *Santiago* with a crew made up mostly of Mexicans, was the first non-native to sight, examine, name, and record the islands near British Columbia including what is now Vancouver Island and Queen Charlotte Island. Perez sailed from Mexico on behalf of Spain, arriving at the Pacific Northwest during the summer of 1774. He visited Nootka Sound, and was the first to name Mount Olympus in Washington state (its Spanish name was *Cerro Nevada de Santa Rosalia*). He sighted the Strait of Juan de Fuca and much of the coastal territory of Washington state. He was the first European to see and describe Yaquina Head off what we now know as the Oregon coast. He sailed farther along the coastal stretch of California, Oregon, Washington, Canada, and Alaska than any sailor had done before him. During this mission he peacefully traded with the Haida, carefully recorded facets of their customs and culture, and mapped and recorded nautical details for others who soon followed his heroic and historic accomplishments. [File 5677: Full Text >](#)

p. 120 – Nootka Village

Mexican and Spanish settlers complete Neah Bay settlement in May 1792. In May 1792, Mexican and Spanish settlers commanded by Salvador Fidalgo complete the first permanent European settlement in present-day Washington at Neah Bay near the northern tip of the Olympic Peninsula. Explorer Manuel Quimper had claimed the bay and named it Nunez Gaona on August 1, 1790. The camp is only briefly occupied before Spain retreats from the Pacific Northwest under threat of war with Great Britain. [File 7953: Full Text >](#)

Spain and Great Britain sign the Nootka Convention on October 28, 1790. On October 28, 1790, Spain and Great Britain sign the Nootka Convention, which ends Spanish claims to a monopoly of settlement and trade in the

Pacific Northwest. Nootka Sound, an inlet of the sea on the west coast of present-day Vancouver Island, will later become part of Canada. [File 7957: Full Text >](#)

p. 120 – Bruno de Hezeta

Spanish Exploration: Hezeta (Heceta) and Bodega y Quadra Expedition of 1775 to Formally Claim the Pacific Northwest for Spain In March 1775, the second Spanish expedition, commanded by Bruno de Hezeta (sometimes spelled Heceta), sailed north from Mexico to Nueva Galicia (the Pacific Northwest). This expedition set forth shortly after Juan Perez (d. 1775) returned from his historic first European journey to explore and map Spain's farthest frontier on the west coast of the American continent. The mission of the second Spanish expedition was to successfully take formal possession of the land and to further exert Spain's claim to Nueva Galicia. Having learned from the difficulties of sailing only one vessel during the first voyage, this expedition was carried out with three Mexican-built ships. Naval officers recently transferred to San Blas, Mexico, from the best naval academies in Spain were expressly recruited for the purpose of helping complete this important expedition. This time, Juan Perez was second in command. [File 5688: Full Text >](#)

Bruno de Hezeta (Heceta) party lands at future site of Grenville Bay and claims the Pacific Northwest for Spain on July 12, 1775. On July 12, 1775, Bruno de Hezeta, Juan Perez, and others from the Spanish ship *Santiago* land on the site of the future Grenville Bay and claim Nueva Galicia (the Pacific Northwest) for Spain. This is the first European landing in the future state of Washington. [File 5690: Full Text >](#)

p. 120 – Juan Bodego y Quada

Spanish Exploration: Ignacio Arteaga and Bodega y Quadra's 1779 Expedition In 1779, Spain launched a third expedition from San Blas, Mexico, to Nueva Galicia (the Pacific Northwest). The third expedition was planned after the triumphant return of Bodega y Quadra and Bruno de Hezeta from the second (1775) expedition, which had reached as far as Alaska and had succeeded in claiming the region for Spain by making a difficult and costly landing on the Olympic Peninsula. After much preparation, in February 1779, two vessels, the *Princesa* and the *Favorita*, commanded by Ignacio Arteaga and Bodega y Quadra, set sail. The context was rivalry with England, including Spanish support for the American Revolution. This third expedition reached as far north as present-day Ketchikan, Alaska (southernmost Alaska), landed and named many points, and had extensive contact and trading with Indians. In Alaska the crew suffered severe illness to the point that a hospital was set up on shore; numerous friendly contacts with the Indians continued during this interlude. The two ships returned to San Blas in November 1779. The Spanish had no knowledge of the English Captain James Cook's expedition during 1778-1779 to the Pacific Northwest, and erred in keeping secret their maps and logs. As a virtual tidal wave of traders entered the region, Spain began to lose influence. [File 5689: Full Text >](#)

p. 120 – Francisco Eliza and Manuel Quimper

Pacific Northwest Explorations Before the American Presence In A. D. 458, a Chinese adventurer named Hwui Shan crossed the Pacific to Mexico, and then followed the Japan current north to Alaska. Centuries later, in September 1513, Vasco Nunez de Balboa "discovered" the Pacific after struggling across the swampy Isthmus of Panama. Following that momentous event, Spain dispatched a number of legendary captains to the West Coast of North America, including Hernando Cortez, Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo, and Bartolome Ferrelo. In 1579, Britain's pirate Francis Drake sailed off the Oregon coast; during the early 1740s, Vitus Bering opened the North Pacific to

Imperial Russia; during the late 1700s, English captains James Cook and George Vancouver charted the Pacific including the bays and inlets of Puget Sound (Vancouver); and in 1786, Comte de La Perouse, representing France, sailed to the Queen Charlotte islands. [File 5449: Full Text >](#)

Mexican and Spanish settlers complete Neah Bay settlement in May 1792. In May 1792, Mexican and Spanish settlers commanded by Salvador Fidalgo complete the first permanent European settlement in present-day Washington at Neah Bay near the northern tip of the Olympic Peninsula. Explorer Manuel Quimper had claimed the bay and named it Nunez Gaona on August 1, 1790. The camp is only briefly occupied before Spain retreats from the Pacific Northwest under threat of war with Great Britain. [File 7953: Full Text >](#)

p. 120 – Sir Francis Drake

Pacific Northwest Explorations Before the American Presence In A. D. 458, a Chinese adventurer named Hwui Shan crossed the Pacific to Mexico, and then followed the Japan current north to Alaska. Centuries later, in September 1513, Vasco Nunez de Balboa "discovered" the Pacific after struggling across the swampy Isthmus of Panama. Following that momentous event, Spain dispatched a number of legendary captains to the West Coast of North America, including Hernando Cortez, Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo, and Bartolome Ferrel. In 1579, Britain's pirate Francis Drake sailed off the Oregon coast; during the early 1740s, Vitus Bering opened the North Pacific to Imperial Russia; during the late 1700s, English captains James Cook and George Vancouver charted the Pacific including the bays and inlets of Puget Sound (Vancouver); and in 1786, Comte de La Perouse, representing France, sailed to the Queen Charlotte islands. [File 5449: Full Text >](#)

p. 120, 123 – Captain James Cook

British explorer Captain James Cook names Cape Flattery on March 22, 1778. On March 22, 1778, Captain James Cook (1728-1779) names Cape Flattery. The Cape, home to the Makah Indians, and now part of the Makah Reservation, is the northwesternmost point in the continental United States, and marks the entrance to the Strait of Juan de Fuca. The name that the British explorer bestows is the oldest non-Indian place name still in use on Washington state maps. [File 5035: Full Text >](#)

p. 120 – John Meares

English fur trader John Meares names Cape Disappointment on July 6, 1788. On July 6, 1788, English fur trader John Meares (1756?-1809) names the northern side of the entrance to the Columbia River, Cape Disappointment. The name reflects Meares' chagrin at not finding the Columbia River. [File 5621: Full Text >](#)

p. 121 – Nootka Controversy/Convention

Spain and Great Britain sign the Nootka Convention on October 28, 1790. On October 28, 1790, Spain and Great Britain sign the Nootka Convention, which ends Spanish claims to a monopoly of settlement and trade in the Pacific Northwest. Nootka Sound, an inlet of the sea on the west coast of present-day Vancouver Island, will later become part of Canada. [File 7957: Full Text >](#)

p. 121 – Captain George Vancouver

Vancouver's Exploration of the North Pacific, 1791-1795 George Vancouver's voyage of 1791-1795 was about the exploration of a new world and staking England's claim there; about cultural encounters and exchanges of knowledge and ideas. But in terms of looking at the bigger picture, his discoveries and explorations were about peeling back the layers of an unknown territory and satiating man's hungry desire to discover the unknown and expand human understanding. Editorial note: This essay by Emily Miller, age 14, of Coupeville, won top honors in the junior division of the 2004 Washington History Day competition, and earned a \$100 supplemental prize from History Ink/HistoryLink for focusing on a subject in Washington state history. We are proud to sponsor History Day and will renew our awards for winning essays in future History Day Programs. [File 5708: Full Text >](#)

Vancouver, George (1758-1798) George Vancouver was an important explorer of Puget Sound. He served for 25 years in the British Navy, and commanded the *Discovery* on her expedition to the North Pacific. In April 1792, George Vancouver entered the Strait of Juan de Fuca and commenced his exploration of Puget Sound. He named every island, mountain, waterway, and point of land in sight -- 75 in all. [File 5359: Full Text >](#)

Captains Robert Gray and George Vancouver meet off the Washington coast on April 28 or 29, 1792. On April 28 (or 29), 1792, two of the first non-Indian navigators to explore significant parts of what is now Washington meet on the high seas off Cape Flattery, just south of the entrance to the Strait of Juan de Fuca. Captain George Vancouver (1758-1798) goes on to explore and name much of Puget Sound as well as Vancouver Island. Captain Robert Gray (1755-1806), an American in search of furs, soon finds the Columbia River, which Vancouver, like all prior European navigators, has missed, thus giving the young United States its primary claim to the lands of the Pacific Northwest. [File 5049: Full Text >](#)

Captain George Vancouver names Port Townsend on May 8, 1792. On May 8, 1792, British Royal Navy Captain George Vancouver (1757-1798) names an extensive bay at the northeast corner of the Olympic Peninsula for the Marquess of Townshend, a British general. The "h" is later dropped and the bay is now called Port Townsend. The city of Port Townsend, now the county seat of Jefferson County, is founded in the 1850s at the mouth of the bay and adopts its name. [File 5291: Full Text >](#)

Captain George Vancouver drops anchor off Elliott Point (future Mukilteo) at midnight, May 30, 1792. At midnight on May 30, 1792, British explorer George Vancouver (1758-1798), sailing on the *Discovery*, drops anchor at Elliott Point, the site of present-day Mukilteo. The following morning crewmembers from the *Discovery* disembark for exploration. [File 8432: Full Text >](#)

British Royal Navy Lieutenant William Broughton names Point Vancouver on October 30, 1792. On October 30, 1792, British Royal Navy Lieutenant William Broughton (1762-1821), who is exploring the Columbia River under orders from Captain George Vancouver (1757-1798), names Point Vancouver for his expedition commander. The point, on the north bank of the Columbia about four miles east of the present site of Washougal, Clark County, marks the end of Broughton's exploration up the river. [File 5233: Full Text >](#)

p. 124 - Vitus Bering

Pacific Northwest Explorations Before the American Presence In A. D. 458, a Chinese adventurer named Hwui Shan crossed the Pacific to Mexico, and then followed the Japan current north to Alaska. Centuries later, in September 1513, Vasco Nunez de Balboa "discovered" the Pacific after struggling across the swampy Isthmus of Panama. Following that momentous event, Spain dispatched a number of legendary captains to the West Coast of North America, including Hernando Cortez, Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo, and Bartolome Ferrello. In 1579, Britain's

pirate Francis Drake sailed off the Oregon coast; during the early 1740s, Vitus Bering opened the North Pacific to Imperial Russia; during the late 1700s, English captains James Cook and George Vancouver charted the Pacific including the bays and inlets of Puget Sound (Vancouver); and in 1786, Comte de La Perouse, representing France, sailed to the Queen Charlotte islands. [File 5449: Full Text >](#)

p. 124 – Robert Gray

Captains Robert Gray and George Vancouver meet off the Washington coast on April 28 or 29, 1792. On April 28 (or 29), 1792, two of the first non-Indian navigators to explore significant parts of what is now Washington meet on the high seas off Cape Flattery, just south of the entrance to the Strait of Juan de Fuca. Captain George Vancouver (1758-1798) goes on to explore and name much of Puget Sound as well as Vancouver Island. Captain Robert Gray (1755-1806), an American in search of furs, soon finds the Columbia River, which Vancouver, like all prior European navigators, has missed, thus giving the young United States its primary claim to the lands of the Pacific Northwest. [File 5049: Full Text >](#)

Captain Robert Gray enters Grays Harbor on May 7, 1792. On May 7, 1792, American fur trader Robert Gray (1755-1806) enters Grays Harbor, a large natural harbor on the Pacific coast south of the Olympic Peninsula in present-day Grays Harbor County. Gray, on his second trading voyage to the Northwest Coast from New England, is exploring the coast south of the Strait of Juan de Fuca following a year of trading for sea otter and other furs on Vancouver Island. He and his crew are the first whites to enter Grays Harbor. [File 5050: Full Text >](#)

Captain Robert Gray becomes the first non-Indian navigator to enter the Columbia River, which he later names, on May 11, 1792. On May 11, 1792, American fur trader Robert Gray (1755-1806) enters the major river of the Pacific Northwest in his ship the *Columbia Rediviva*. Indian peoples have lived and navigated along Wimahl ("Big River") for tens of thousands of years, and Europeans have been sailing the Northwest Coast for more than 200 years. However, Gray is the first non-Indian to succeed in entering Wimahl, which he renames the Columbia River after his ship. [File 5051: Full Text >](#)

Captain Robert Gray explores Grays Bay and charts the mouth of Grays River in May 1792. Around May 14 through 17, 1792, American fur trader Robert Gray (1755-1806) explores Grays Bay on the Columbia River shore of present-day Wahkiakum County, and charts the outlet of Grays River where it enters the Bay. Grays Bay is an embayment on the north bank about 20 miles upstream from the mouth of the Columbia River. The various branches of Grays River rise in the Willapa Hills on the boundary ridge between Lewis and Wahkiakum Counties in southwest Washington, draining 124 square miles before flowing into the Columbia at Grays Bay. Both are named for Robert Gray. [File 5052: Full Text >](#)

p. 125 – Columbia River named

Captain Robert Gray becomes the first non-Indian navigator to enter the Columbia River, which he later names, on May 11, 1792. On May 11, 1792, American fur trader Robert Gray (1755-1806) enters the major river of the Pacific Northwest in his ship the *Columbia Rediviva*. Indian peoples have lived and navigated along Wimahl ("Big River") for tens of thousands of years, and Europeans have been sailing the Northwest Coast for more than 200 years. However, Gray is the first non-Indian to succeed in entering Wimahl, which he renames the Columbia River after his ship. [File 5051: Full Text >](#)

p. 129 – Louisiana Purchase

The United States signs the Louisiana Purchase Treaty and buys Louisiana Territory from France on May 2, 1803. On May 2, 1803, the United States and France sign the Louisiana Purchase Treaty, (which was antedated to April 30, 1803). With the stroke of a pen, the United States, a new and rather small nation, doubles in size, adding nearly 828,000 square miles -- an enormous swath of land that stretches across the entire central portion of present-day United States. France sells the land "for a song" -- about four cents an acre. The Louisiana Purchase is the achievement of America's third president, Thomas Jefferson (1743-1826). Jefferson had already planned the Lewis and Clark Expedition to explore the vast, unknown land west of the Missouri River, much of which had belonged to France. By the time the Louisiana Purchase is announced to the tiny nation on July 3, 1803, Meriwether Lewis is already on his way to Pittsburgh to obtain supplies for the historic journey, which will now proceed across lands belonging to the United States. [File 5706: Full Text >](#)

p. 128 - 135 – Lewis and Clark Expedition/Corps of Discovery

Lewis and Clark Expedition in Washington State, 1805-1806: An Illustrated Cybertour An illustrated cybertour of the Lewis and Clark Expedition in Washington state. The Corps of Volunteers for Northwest Discovery (as the expedition was formally named) entered the region of the future state of Washington in October 1805. The cybertour was written and curated by Cassandra Tate, with photos by Glenn Drosendahl. [File 7062: Full Text >](#)

Lewis and Clark in Washington State In May 1803, the United States purchased Louisiana from France. The doubling of U.S. territory caused President Thomas Jefferson (1743-1826) to send Meriwether Lewis (1774-1809) on a Westward expedition to explore the nation's new piece of real estate. The Corps of Discovery was a party of 33 persons, including Sacagawea, a Shohone Indian, and York, an African slave. The Corps, under the leadership of Captain Lewis and Captain William Clark (1770-1838), traveled by foot, horse, and watercraft across North America and back again beginning in Wood River, Illinois, in May 1804, and returning to St. Louis, Missouri, in August 1806. The period the Corps spent along the Columbia and Snake rivers and at the mouth of the Columbia -- from October 1805 to May 1806 -- was principally within what is now the state of Washington. [File 5556: Full Text >](#)

p. 131 – Lewis and Clark /Nez Perce

Lewis and Clark Expedition enters Washington state on October 10, 1805. On October 10, 1805, Lewis and Clark and the Corps of Volunteers for Northwestern Discovery enter what is now the state of Washington, at the confluence of what they call the "Koos koos ke" (Clearwater River) and the "Kimooenem" or "Lewis's River" (Snake). [File 5323: Full Text >](#)

Lewis and Clark reach the confluence of the Snake and Columbia rivers on October 16, 1805. On October 16, 1805, the Lewis and Clark Expedition reaches the confluence of the Snake and Columbia rivers at present-day Pasco, beginning the final leg of 4,000-mile journey of exploration from St. Louis, Missouri, to the Pacific Ocean. [File 5337: Full Text >](#)

p. 131 – Lewis and Clark /Chinook

Lewis and Clark begin descending the rapids of the Columbia River at Celilo Falls on October 22, 1805. On October 22, 1805, Lewis and Clark and the Corps of Discovery encounter Celilo Falls, at the beginning of a 55-mile

stretch of the Columbia River that will prove to be the most difficult and dangerous part of their journey through the Pacific Northwest. [File 5355: Full Text >](#)

Lewis and Clark camp near Salmon Creek in Clark County on November 4, 1805. On November 4, 1805, the Corps of Discovery led by Meriwether Lewis (1774-1809) and William Clark (1770-1838) camps on the Columbia River in what is now Clark County, beside a Chinookan Indian house near the entrance of Salmon Creek. The expedition has come nearly 4,000 miles from the mouth of the Missouri River, and is nearing its goal -- the Pacific Ocean at the mouth of the Columbia River. [File 5174: Full Text >](#)

p. 131, 135 - Lewis and Clark/York and deciding on where to spend winter

In first election by Americans in the West, the Corps of Discovery votes to winter on the south side of the Columbia River on November 24, 1805. On November 24, 1805, the Corps of Discovery, led by Captains Meriwether Lewis and William Clark, votes to spend the winter on the south bank of the Columbia River. All members of the expedition are allowed to participate. This is the first election by Americans in the West, and the first election to include a woman, a Native American, and an African slave. [File 7539: Full Text >](#)

p. 135 – Lewis and Clark /Fort Clatsop

Lewis and Clark Expedition in Washington State, 1805-1806: An Illustrated Cybertour An illustrated cybertour of the Lewis and Clark Expedition in Washington state. The Corps of Volunteers for Northwest Discovery (as the expedition was formally named) entered the region of the future state of Washington in October 1805. The cybertour was written and curated by Cassandra Tate, with photos by Glenn Drosendahl. [File 7062: Full Text >](#)

\Cape Disappointment State Park Cape Disappointment State Park juts into the Pacific Ocean at the tip of the Long Beach Peninsula, in the southwesternmost corner of Washington state. This is the place where Lewis and Clark and the Corps of Volunteers for Northwestern Discovery ended their long journey to the sea. They carved their names and the date -- November 18, 1805 -- on a tree, pausing to watch the powerful surf breaking on the rocks below. Exactly 200 years later, members of the Chinook Tribe, art patrons, politicians, and community leaders gathered here to dedicate the first phase of the Confluence Project, designed by famed artist and architect Maya Lin (b. 1959) to commemorate the Lewis-Clark Expedition. For Lin, Cape Disappointment is a study in convergence: water and land, river and ocean, white explorers and Native Americans, past and present. "Here is where we hold up a mirror to the Lewis and Clark story," she says. "Our journey begins here" (Confluence Project website). [File 7602: Full Text >](#)

p. 135 - Lewis and Clark /Arriving at the Pacific

Lewis and Clark prematurely celebrate their arrival at the Pacific Ocean on November 7, 1805. On November 7, 1805, thinking he can see and hear the Pacific Ocean in the distance, William Clark writes his most famous journal entry: "Great joy in camp we are in *view* of the *Ocian*, this great Pacific Octean which we have been so long anxious to See." In fact, the Lewis and Clark Expedition is still 20 miles from the sea. [File 5360: Full Text >](#)

Lewis and Clark Expedition reaches the Pacific Ocean on November 15, 1805. On November 15, 1805, Lewis and Clark and the Corps of Volunteers for Northwestern Discovery reach the Pacific Ocean at the mouth of the

Columbia River, one year, six months, and one day after leaving St. Louis, Missouri, in search of the legendary "Northwest Passage" to the sea. [File 5383: Full Text >](#)

Captain William Clark of the Lewis and Clark Expedition visits the future site of Long Beach on November 19, 1805. On November 19, 1805, Captain William Clark (1770-1838) of the Lewis and Clark Expedition visits the future site of Long Beach. Clark records in his journal that at the most northerly point the expedition reached on the Pacific coast he inscribed "my name on a Small pine, the Day of the month & Year, Etc." (Reuben Gold Thwaites, 236). The tree will be lost, but a bronze sculpture placed along the Discovery Trail in Long Beach in 2003 will commemorate Clark's visit and mark the tree's approximate location. [File 9814: Full Text >](#)

Homeward bound, the Lewis and Clark Expedition leaves Washington state on May 5, 1806. On May 5, 1806, after taking an overland shortcut from present-day Wallula to the vicinity of Clarkston, the Lewis and Clark Expedition leaves the confines of what is now Washington state. From here, the explorers will continue east, ending their 8,000-mile "voyage of discovery" in St. Louis, Missouri, four months later. [File 5398: Full Text >](#)

Tri-Cities celebrates the bicentennial of the Lewis and Clark Expedition beginning on October 14, 2005. From October 14 through 17, 2005, the Tri-Cities celebrates the bicentennial of the Lewis and Clark Expedition. Meriwether Lewis and William Clark had explored the area 200 years before, in 1805. People from across the Columbia Basin celebrate the anniversary of that historic event at Sacajawea State Park, located in Pasco at the confluence of the Snake and Columbia rivers, and at Columbia Park in Kennewick. Descendants of the tribal peoples who greeted Lewis and Clark's Corps of Volunteers for Northwest Discovery join in and share their perspective. [File 7605: Full Text >](#)

p. 132 - Lewis and Clark /Scientific Research (natural history)

p. 137 - Connecting to Community – (Canoe Trip)

Northwest Indian canoes return to site of Point Elliott Treaty on July 26, 2007. On July 26, 2007, about 40 tribal canoes from Puget Sound, the Washington coast, and Vancouver Island land at Lighthouse Park in Mukilteo south of Everett as part of the 2007 Intertribal Canoe Journey. The landing and the traditional celebration that follows are the largest intertribal gathering at the site, also known as Point Elliott, since January 22, 1855, when 82 leaders of Puget Sound tribes signed the Treaty of Point Elliott, giving up almost all their land in return for small reservations and perpetual fishing and hunting rights. The tribal canoe journey, an annual event since the 1989 "Paddle to Seattle," will end four days later near Bellingham, where the Lummi Nation will host a week-long potlatch ceremony. [File 8269: Full Text >](#)

CHAPTER 5: THE FUR TRADE ERA, 1786-1846

p. 139 – Rocky Mountain Fur Company

p. 140, 152 – Oregon Country

Oregon Territory, Establishment of European exploration of the Pacific Northwest from the late 1500s through the 1700s led to multiple and overlapping territorial claims by Spain, Russia, France, Britain, and last but not least,

the new American republic. At issue was the vast "Oregon Country" extending along the Pacific Coast from the northern edge of Spanish California on the 42nd parallel to the southern edge of "Russian America" (now Alaska) at 54 degrees 40 minutes north. [File 5446: Full Text >](#)

p. 145, 148 – value of beaver (fur trading)

p. 152-3 - Northwest Fur Company

Jaco Finlay guides five Iroquois trappers to the Columbia in June 1808. In the summer of 1808, Jacques Raphael "Jaco" Finlay (1768-1828) guides five Iroquois trappers from eastern Canada across the Continental Divide. Finlay, a "free hunter" and former and future clerk for the fur-trading North West Company, brings the eastern Indians to trap beaver with him in the firm's newly established Columbia District. Known only by their first names -- Joseph, Pierre, Ignace, Martin, and Jacques -- these men, and those who follow them west, will change the economic and social fabric of the Inland Northwest. After Finlay establishes Spokane House near present-day Spokane in 1810, many of the Iroquois will settle nearby in the Colville Valley. [File 8412: Full Text >](#)

The North West Company establishes Spokane House in 1810. In 1810, the Canadian North West Company establishes a fur-trading post called Spokane House where the Little Spokane River joins the Spokane River, about 10 miles downstream from the current location of the city of Spokane in Eastern Washington. Spokane House is the first longterm non-Indian settlement in what is now Washington state. For 16 years it is the headquarters for the fur trade between the Rockies and the Cascades, and a major commercial and social center in the region. [File 5099: Full Text >](#)

The North West Company takes possession of Fort Okanogan on December 15, 1813. On December 15, 1813, representatives of the North West Company of Montreal officially take possession of Fort Okanogan from the Pacific Fur Company of New York. Alexander Ross (1783-1856), a clerk employed by the Pacific Fur Company, transfers his allegiance to the North West Company and continues in charge of the post. [File 9768: Full Text >](#)

Hudson's Bay Company The Hudson's Bay Company, a fur-trading enterprise headquartered in London, began operations on the shores of Hudson Bay in 1670. During the next century and a half, it gradually expanded its network of trading posts west across Canada. In 1821, it merged with its prime rival, the North West Company out of Montreal, thus acquiring several posts in the Pacific Northwest. Under the leadership of Governor George Simpson (1787-1860) and Chief Factor John McLoughlin (1784-1857), the company dominated the land-based fur trade in the Northwest for the next four decades. After the Oregon Treaty of 1846 settled the international boundary at the 49th parallel, the company gradually phased out its operations in Oregon and Washington territories and moved its Northwest headquarters to Vancouver Island. [File 9881: Full Text >](#)

p. 152 - Alexander Mackenzie (Pacific Fur Company)

Pacific Northwest Explorations Before the American Presence In A. D. 458, a Chinese adventurer named Hwui Shan crossed the Pacific to Mexico, and then followed the Japan current north to Alaska. Centuries later, in September 1513, Vasco Nunez de Balboa "discovered" the Pacific after struggling across the swampy Isthmus of Panama. Following that momentous event, Spain dispatched a number of legendary captains to the West Coast of North America, including Hernando Cortez, Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo, and Bartolome Ferrelo. In 1579, Britain's pirate Francis Drake sailed off the Oregon coast; during the early 1740s, Vitus Bering opened the North Pacific to

Imperial Russia; during the late 1700s, English captains James Cook and George Vancouver charted the Pacific including the bays and inlets of Puget Sound (Vancouver); and in 1786, Comte de La Perouse, representing France, sailed to the Queen Charlotte islands. [File 5449: Full Text >](#)

Astorians Donald Mackenzie and Robert McClellan descend the Snake River to the Columbia River in early January 1812. In early January, 1812, Pacific Fur Company partners Donald Mackenzie (1783-1851) and Robert McClellan (1770-1815) descend the Snake River to the Columbia in present-day Washington state. Mackenzie and McClellan are among the leaders of a large overland expedition dispatched by fur baron John Jacob Astor (1763-1848) of New York. The overland party intends to rendezvous at the mouth of the Columbia River with other company members traveling by ship. The Astorians, as they are known, plan to extend Astor's trading network throughout the Northwest. [File 9230: Full Text >](#)

John Jacob Astor and Pacific Fur Company partners sign agreement in New York City on June 23, 1810. On June 23, 1810, Pacific Fur Company partners sign articles of agreement in New York City. This new enterprise aims to monopolize the American fur trade from coast to coast. The wealthy New York merchant John Jacob Astor (1763-1848) is president, prime mover, and principal stockholder of the fledgling organization, and he will soon dispatch two expeditions to found a transcontinental trading network headquartered on the Columbia River, "the first American commercial undertaking west of the mountains." [File 9437: Full Text >](#)

p. 152 - David Thompson (Northwest Fur Company) – there are a series of timeline essays following David Thompson's exploration down the Columbia River (8676, 8677, 5102, 9006, 9007, 9008, 9009, 9010, 9177, 9178, 9179, 9180, 9181, 8413, 9229 – these three are samples)

Fur trader David Thompson explores the Pend Oreille River in September and October 1809. From September 27 through October 6, 1809, Canadian explorer David Thompson (1770-1857) scouts the Pend Oreille River from Lake Pend Oreille in Idaho, downstream through what is now Pend Oreille County in the northeastern corner of Washington. He and the French Canadian voyageur accompanying him are the first non-Indians to reach the area. Thompson, a trader, surveyor, and mapmaker for the North West Company, is exploring the tributaries of the upper Columbia River for sources of beaver and other furs and for routes to get those furs to market. [File 5097: Full Text >](#)

David Thompson plants the British flag at the confluence of the Columbia and Snake rivers on July 9, 1811. On July 9, 1811, at the mouth of the Snake River where it joins the Columbia, Canadian explorer David Thompson (1770-1857) erects a pole with a sign claiming the surrounding country for Great Britain. Thompson also leaves a British flag with the Wallula Indians, who control the area. The sign and flag are a statement to the American fur traders of John Jacob Astor's Pacific Fur Company, who are competing with Thompson's North West Company of Canada, then still a British colony. The British claim does not prevail: the confluence of the Snake and Columbia now marks the intersection of Benton, Franklin, and Walla Walla counties in Washington. [File 5096: Full Text >](#)

David Thompson concludes first scientific survey of the Columbia River and departs Kettle Falls for Montreal on April 22, 1812. On April 22, 1812, David Thompson (1770-1857), Canadian explorer, geographer, and fur trader, departs Kettle Falls and canoes upstream on the Columbia River, bound for eastern Canada. Thompson, a partner with the North West Company of Montreal, has recently completed the first scientific survey of the entire length of the Columbia and is retiring from the fur trade to compile a series of maps from the data he has collected on his journeys. His completed charts will include the first accurate rendition of the Inland Northwest north of the Snake River. [File 9441: Full Text >](#)

p. 153 - Kootenai House

p. 154 – War of 1812

U.S. Congress votes to declare war on Great Britain on June 18, 1812. On June 18, 1812, the U.S. Congress votes to declare war on Great Britain, and President James Madison (1751-1836) signs a Proclamation of War. New York entrepreneur John Jacob Astor (1763-1848) realizes that the outbreak of hostilities may have serious consequences for his Pacific Fur Company's operations on the Columbia River in present-day Washington and Oregon. [File 9665: Full Text >](#)

John McTavish brings news of war to Spokane House in mid-November 1812. In mid-November, 1812, John G. McTavish (ca. 1778-1847) of the North West Company brings news of the outbreak of War of 1812 to Spokane House (near present-day Spokane). This is the first knowledge of the war for the dozens of British and American citizens who are working for fur trading companies in present-day Washington, Idaho, Montana, and Oregon. [File 9666: Full Text >](#)

During the War of 1812, a North West Company vessel carrying supplies departs eastern Canada for the Columbia River on March 25, 1813. March 25, 1813, the ship *Isaac Todd*, owned by the North West Company of Montreal, departs Portsmouth en route to the Columbia River with supplies for the company's fur trading posts in the Northwest. The War of 1812 renders the passage extremely perilous. [File 9667: Full Text >](#)

HMS *Raccoon* becomes first British warship to enter Columbia River on November 30, 1813. On November 30, 1813, in the midst of the War of 1812, HMS ship *Raccoon* arrives on the Columbia River with orders from the British Admiralty to seize all American property on the river and along the coast. She is the first Royal Navy warship to enter the Columbia. [File 9766: Full Text >](#)

American fur traders of Pacific Fur Company agree to sell their properties to rival North West Company on October 16, 1813. On October 16, 1813, facing an uncertain future due to the War of 1812, Pacific Fur Company agents, known as Astorians after company principal John Jacob Astor (1763-1848), meet at Fort Astoria and agree to sell all of their properties in the Northwest, including posts on the Columbia, Okanogan, and Spokane rivers, to the rival North West Company, a Canadian concern with headquarters in Montreal. [File 9681: Full Text >](#)

During the War of 1812, Captain William Black claims possession of the Columbia River drainage for Great Britain on December 13, 1813. On December 13, 1813, in the midst of the War of 1812, Captain William Black of the Royal Navy takes possession of the Columbia River drainage for Great Britain and changes the name of Fort Astoria to Fort George in honor of King George III. The War of 1812 was fought between the United States and Great Britain between 1812 and 1815. [File 9767: Full Text >](#)

Royal Navy vessel HMS *Raccoon* departs the Columbia River after taking possession for Great Britain on December 31, 1813. On December 31, 1813, in the midst of the War of 1812, the Royal Navy warship HMS *Raccoon* departs the Columbia River after taking possession of the region for Great Britain. During a month anchored at Bakers Bay, the ship's Captain William Black re-surveyed the mouth of the Columbia and updated the 1792 charts made by Lieutenant William Broughton (1762-1821) under Captain George Vancouver (1758-1798). [File 9769: Full Text >](#)

p. 154 - Jonathan Thorn/ Duncan MacDougall/Tonquin

The ship *Tonquin* out of New York City sights the mouth of the Columbia River on March 22, 1811. On March 22, 1811, the ship *Tonquin* out of New York City sights the mouth of the Columbia River. The *Tonquin* is owned by

fur baron John Jacob Astor (1763-1848) of New York and carries charter members of the Pacific Fur Company, who intend to establish the first American trading post on the Columbia. The ship struggles for two days to cross the perilous bar, losing eight sailors before anchoring in Baker's Bay. [File 8673: Full Text >](#)

Hawaiian Islanders conduct traditional funeral for drowned countryman near mouth of Columbia River on March 26, 1811. On March 26, 1811, on the shore of Cape Disappointment, six Hawaiian Islanders conduct a traditional funeral for one of their countrymen who drowned near the mouth of the Columbia River. The mourners are assisted by Gabriel Franchere and Benjamin Pillet, clerks for the Pacific Fur Company, and fellow passengers on the ship *Tonquin*, owned by fur baron John Jacob Astor (1763-1848) of New York. The *Tonquin* has ferried charter members of the Astor's Pacific Fur Company, known as the Astorians, to the West Coast to establish the first American trading post on the Columbia. [File 8674: Full Text >](#)

p. 154 – Pacific Fur Company

John Jacob Astor and Pacific Fur Company partners sign agreement in New York City on June 23, 1810. On June 23, 1810, Pacific Fur Company partners sign articles of agreement in New York City. This merchant John Jacob Astor (1763-1848) is president, prime mover, and principal stockholder of the fledgling organization, and he will soon dispatch two expeditions to found a transcontinental trading network headquartered on the Columbia River, "the first American commercial undertaking west of the mountains." [File 9437: Full Text >](#)

Astorians trade with Chinook and Clatsop Indians in April 1811. During the first weeks of April 1811, members of the Pacific Fur Company trade with the local Chinook and Clatsop Indians while a small party scouts the north shore of the Columbia River and journeys upstream in search of a suitable building site for the first American trading post on the Columbia. The Astorians, as they are known, are the vanguard of a new business enterprise by fur baron John Jacob Astor (1763-1848) of New York. Astor intends to establish a commercial fur empire in the Northwest as well as a transcontinental trade network between the Missouri and the Pacific coast. [File 8675: Full Text >](#)

David Thompson, Canadian explorer and agent of the North West Company, reaches the mouth of the Columbia River and meets with Pacific Fur Company agents at Astoria on July 15, 1811. On July 15, 1811, Canadian explorer David Thompson (1770-1857) reaches the mouth of the Columbia River after a historic voyage downriver from Kettle Falls. In addition to his scientific work as a geographer, Thompson is the fur agent in charge of the Columbia Department of the North West Company of Canada. He is on a mission to determine whether the Columbia is navigable from its upper reaches to the sea and whether it will provide a viable trade route for the fur company. Thompson also carries a message for members of John Jacob Astor's Pacific Fur Company, who have recently reached the mouth of the Columbia on the ship *Tonquin* to establish a trading post called Astoria. [File 9177: Full Text >](#)

Representatives from the North West Company of Canada and the Pacific Fur Company of New York make the first ascent of the lower Columbia River for commercial purposes beginning on July 22, 1811. From July 22 to 31, 1811, Canadian explorer David Thompson (1770-1857) ascends the lower Columbia River, accompanied by members of the Pacific Fur Company of New York, who have just established a post called Astoria near the mouth of the Columbia. Thompson, the fur agent in charge of the Columbia Department of the North West Company of Canada, has recently descended the Columbia from Kettle Falls, thereby determining that the river is navigable to the sea and that it will provide a viable trade route between the Pacific, the Inland Northwest, and Canada. Following his arrival at Astoria, Thompson and officials of the American company have negotiated a tentative arrangement for sharing the trade of the Columbia District. [File 9180: Full Text >](#)

Fur trader Alexander Ross arrives at the mouth of the Yakima River on August 16, 1811. On August 16, 1811, Alexander Ross, a trader and explorer with Astor's Pacific Fur Company goes up the Columbia River and arrives at the mouth of Yakima River. There he encounters a number of Indians and observes a novel method of fishing. He is also asked to restore two dead children to life. [File 8500: Full Text >](#)

John Jacob Astor's Pacific Fur Company establishes Fort Spokane in 1812. In 1812, the Pacific Fur Company of John Jacob Astor (1763-1848), a New York merchant active in the fur trade with China, establishes a trading post called Fort Spokane near the current site of the city of Spokane in Eastern Washington. Astor's American company builds its post where the Little Spokane River joins the Spokane River, next door to Spokane House, a post established two years earlier by Astor's Canadian rival, the North West Company. After two years of trade rivalry, Astor's representatives sell all his Northwest posts to the North West Company, and Fort Spokane merges with Spokane House. [File 5101: Full Text >](#)

American fur traders of Pacific Fur Company agree to sell their properties to rival North West Company on October 16, 1813. On October 16, 1813, facing an uncertain future due to the War of 1812, Pacific Fur Company agents, known as Astorians after company principal John Jacob Astor (1763-1848), meet at Fort Astoria and agree to sell all of their properties in the Northwest, including posts on the Columbia, Okanogan, and Spokane rivers, to the rival North West Company, a Canadian concern with headquarters in Montreal. [File 9681: Full Text >](#)

p. 155 – John Jacob Astor

John Jacob Astor and Pacific Fur Company partners sign agreement in New York City on June 23, 1810. On June 23, 1810, Pacific Fur Company partners sign articles of agreement in New York City. This new enterprise aims to monopolize the American fur trade from coast to coast. The wealthy New York merchant John Jacob Astor (1763-1848) is president, prime mover, and principal stockholder of the fledgling organization, and he will soon dispatch two expeditions to found a transcontinental trading network headquartered on the Columbia River, "the first American commercial undertaking west of the mountains." [File 9437: Full Text >](#)

p. 155 -- Forts of Washington Territory

Forts of Washington Territory, Indian War Era, 1855-1856 The era of the treaty wars in Washington Territory lasted from 1855-1856. Territorial Governor and Superintendent of Indian Affairs Isaac Stevens (1818-1862) ordered the building of forts and blockhouses to provide settlers safe refuge. Blockhouses were erected in settler communities around the territory. Only a few had stockades and minimal housing. Most were constructed by the militia, the Washington Territorial Volunteers. The U.S. Army built a few forts and individuals created blockhouses or defenses for themselves and neighbors. These defenses lasted only a short time. The threat was over by the end of 1856 with treaties signed in which Indians gave up huge land areas. With the 1856 treaties most of the forts were abandoned. A few survive today to recall that era. [File 10087: Full Text >](#)

p. 155 – Fort Astoria

Astorians name Priest Rapids on August 18, 1811. On August 18, 1811, members of the Pacific Fur Company, known as the Astorians, name Priest Rapids on the Columbia River in honor of a tribal leader they meet there. Priest Rapids is located north of the Big Bend area of the Columbia, just north of White Bluffs (present-day Hanford Reach). The Astorians are on their way upstream to build the first American trading post on the mid-Columbia as

the vanguard of a new business enterprise by New York fur baron John Jacob Astor (1763-1848), who intends to establish a commercial fur empire in the Northwest as well as a transcontinental trade network between the Missouri and the Pacific coast.

[File 9227: Full Text >](#)

Astorians reach site of Fort Okanogan at the junction of the Okanogan and Columbia rivers on August 31, 1811. On August 31, 1811, members of the Pacific Fur Company, known as the Astorians, reach the junction of the Okanogan and Columbia rivers, where they build Fort Okanogan, the first American trading post in Washington state (near present-day Brewster, in Okanogan County). The Pacific Fur Company is a new business enterprise of New York fur baron John Jacob Astor (1763-1848), who intends to establish a transcontinental trade network between the Missouri River and the Pacific coast. [File 9228: Full Text >](#)

Ship *Beaver* reaches the Columbia River on May 9, 1812. On May 9, 1812, the ship *Beaver*, commissioned by John Jacob Astor, reaches the Columbia River, bringing supplies and reinforcements for the Pacific Fur Company, whose charter members had established a fur post called Astoria near the mouth of the Columbia the previous year. Watching the approach of the ship from shore, several Astorians climb Cape Disappointment and set trees on fire to serve as an impromptu lighthouse. Among five newly hired clerks on the *Beaver* are Ross Cox and Alfred Seton, who will record first-hand accounts of activities in the Columbia district. [File 9442: Full Text >](#)

p. 155 – Fort Astoria renamed Fort George

HMS *Raccoon* becomes first British warship to enter Columbia River on November 30, 1813. On November 30, 1813, in the midst of the War of 1812, HMS ship *Raccoon* arrives on the Columbia River with orders from the British Admiralty to seize all American property on the river and along the coast. She is the first Royal Navy warship to enter the Columbia. [File 9766: Full Text >](#)

p. 155 – Fort Okangan

Fort Okanogan Fort Okanogan was the first American outpost in what is now the state of Washington. Established in 1811 by representatives of John Jacob Astor's Pacific Fur Company, the "fort" was a modest affair, initially consisting of only one small building at the confluence of the Okanogan and Columbia Rivers. The Canadian North West Company acquired it in 1814, expanded it, and later sold it to the British Hudson' Bay Company. The British replaced the complex with a second one, built about a mile away, in the 1830s. Today a small state park overlooks the second location. Only the wind and a simple highway historical sign mark the site of the original Fort Okanogan, which proved to be a temporary beachhead in an area that would not become part of the United States for 35 years. [File 7522: Full Text >](#)

Astorians reach site of Fort Okanogan at the junction of the Okanogan and Columbia rivers on August 31, 1811. On August 31, 1811, members of the Pacific Fur Company, known as the Astorians, reach the junction of the Okanogan and Columbia rivers, where they build Fort Okanogan, the first American trading post in Washington state (near present-day Brewster, in Okanogan County). The Pacific Fur Company is a new business enterprise of New York fur baron John Jacob Astor (1763-1848), who intends to establish a transcontinental trade network between the Missouri River and the Pacific coast. [File 9228: Full Text >](#)

The North West Company takes possession of Fort Okanogan on December 15, 1813. On December 15, 1813, representatives of the North West Company of Montreal officially take possession of Fort Okanogan from the

Pacific Fur Company of New York. Alexander Ross (1783-1856), a clerk employed by the Pacific Fur Company, transfers his allegiance to the North West Company and continues in charge of the post. [File 9768: Full Text >](#)

p. 155 – Fort Spokane

John Jacob Astor's Pacific Fur Company establishes Fort Spokane in 1812. In 1812, the Pacific Fur Company of John Jacob Astor (1763-1848), a New York merchant active in the fur trade with China, establishes a trading post called Fort Spokane near the current site of the city of Spokane in Eastern Washington. Astor's American company builds its post where the Little Spokane River joins the Spokane River, next door to Spokane House, a post established two years earlier by Astor's Canadian rival, the North West Company. After two years of trade rivalry, Astor's representatives sell all his Northwest posts to the North West Company, and Fort Spokane merges with Spokane House. [File 5101: Full Text >](#)

U.S. Army establishes Fort Spokane at the junction of the Spokane and Columbia rivers in 1882. In 1882, President Chester A. Arthur (1829-1886) formally establishes Fort Spokane, the U.S. Army's last frontier outpost in the Northwest, at the junction of the Spokane and Columbia rivers in what is now Lincoln County. The post is intended to confine the Colville and Spokane Indians on reservations north and west of the rivers, and remove them from the fertile farmland to the southeast, around the developing city of Spokane. The Indians do not forcibly resist, and the troops stationed at the fort over the two decades of its existence never fire a shot in anger. [File 5358: Full Text >](#)

p. 158–161 - Hudson's Bay Company

Hudson's Bay Company The Hudson's Bay Company, a fur-trading enterprise headquartered in London, began operations on the shores of Hudson Bay in 1670. During the next century and a half, it gradually expanded its network of trading posts west across Canada. In 1821, it merged with its prime rival, the North West Company out of Montreal, thus acquiring several posts in the Pacific Northwest. Under the leadership of Governor George Simpson (1787-1860) and Chief Factor John McLoughlin (1784-1857), the company dominated the land-based fur trade in the Northwest for the next four decades. After the Oregon Treaty of 1846 settled the international boundary at the 49th parallel, the company gradually phased out its operations in Oregon and Washington territories and moved its Northwest headquarters to Vancouver Island. [File 9881: Full Text >](#)

Fort Nisqually

Hudson's Bay Company establishes Fort Nisqually, first white settlement on Puget Sound, in April 1833. In spring 1833, the Hudson's Bay Company dispatches Archibald McDonald to Puget Sound from Fort Vancouver, on the Columbia River near present-day Portland, Oregon. McDonald establishes a stockade and trading post in April near Sequelitchew Creek on the Nisqually Delta, which becomes the first permanent European settlement on Puget Sound. [File 5231: Full Text >](#)

Fort Colville

Hudson's Bay Company begins constructing Fort Colville near Kettle Falls in early August 1825. In early August 1825, the Hudson's Bay Company begins constructing Fort Colville as a trading post. Fort Colville is located at the upper end of the two-mile portage around Kettle Falls on the Columbia River. It will become the most important Hudson's Bay Company post in Eastern Washington. The company will continue to operate the post until 1871. [File 7993: Full Text >](#)

Fort Colvile (Hudson's Bay Company), 1825-1871 Fort Colvile, located near Kettle Falls, was established by the British Hudson's Bay Company (HBC) in 1825 when it moved its upper Columbia Basin fur-trading operations to this new location from Spokane House (established in 1810). The new post was christened Fort Colvile, after HBC official Andrew Colvile. Over the years the post grew, eventually comprising the store, warehouses, shops, stockades and a bastion, dwellings, and out buildings, as well as large land holdings for agriculture and livestock pasture. As a major way point for travelers in the Inland Northwest, Fort Colvile received many visitors, who are the main sources of information for what the post looked like. These accounts are indispensable, for hardly a trace of the place was left after a 1910 fire burned down what was left after 85 years. The post had gone into decline after the 1846 settlement of the American/Canadian border dispute, which left Fort Colvile in U.S. hands. Soon, the American military had established its own Fort Colville, with a slightly different spelling, leaving the old British-Canadian post to enter a long spiral of decay. The Hudson's Bay Company ended its occupation of Fort Colvile on June 8, 1871. The site was inundated by Lake Roosevelt in the early 1950s, following the construction of the Grand Coulee Dam. [File 9235: Full Text >](#)

p. 158 - Fort Vancouver /John McLoughlin

Hudson's Bay Company opens Fort Vancouver on March 19, 1825. On March 19, 1825, the Hudson's Bay Company opens Fort Vancouver on a bluff above the north bank of the Columbia River where the city of Vancouver, Clark County, is now located. For the next 20 years, the British-owned company, with its Fort Vancouver headquarters presided over by chief factor Dr. John McLoughlin (1784-1857), is the leading non-Indian presence in the region. [File 5251: Full Text >](#)

McLoughlin, John (1784-1857) John McLoughlin was once the most powerful man in the Pacific Northwest. As Chief Factor of the Hudson's Bay Company's Columbia District from 1824 until 1846, he ruled a domain that stretched from the Rocky Mountains to the Pacific Ocean, as far north as Alaska and south into California. From his headquarters at Fort Vancouver, he managed an international trading network, maintained peace among dozens of Indian tribes, and provided critical aid to American missionaries and settlers. He earned great profits for his company and a respectable fortune for himself. But his superiors eventually lost faith in him and settlers who had once relied on his kindness and generosity came to resent his wealth and power. After being forced to resign from the company, he settled in Oregon City (near today's Portland), a town he had founded years earlier. Congress later passed a law that denied him legal title to much of the land he had claimed there. He died lonely and embittered in 1857. The honors were belated but abundant. His heirs regained title to the disputed land; his home and headquarters were preserved as national monuments; his statue was placed in the Capitol Building in Washington, D.C.; and his name was given to schools, parks, streets, bridges, even a mountain. He was informally christened the "Father of Oregon" in 1907, a title made official by the Oregon Legislature in 1957, a century after his death. [File 10617: Full Text >](#)

David Douglas arrives at Fort Vancouver to begin two years of botanical exploration on April 20, 1825. On April 20, 1825, David Douglas (1799-1834) arrives at Fort Vancouver, the Hudson's Bay Company's new Columbia River headquarters, in the company of chief factor Dr. John McLoughlin (1784-1857). The young Scotsman is a collector for England's Horticultural Society, dispatched to the Northwest Coast to bring back specimens and seeds of the marvelous and new (to Europeans) plants of the region, for introduction into British gardens and forests. For the next two years, Douglas will use Fort Vancouver as a base for botanical explorations through much of present-day Washington and Oregon, where he will collect thousands of specimens of plants ranging from tiny, rare mosses and herbs to the giant and abundant tree that now bears his name, the Douglas fir (*Pseudotsuga menziesii*, not actually a fir, but a member of a Pacific Rim genus). [File 7298: Full Text >](#)

Fort Vancouver is renamed Vancouver Barracks on April 5, 1879. On April 5, 1879, Fort Vancouver, in Clark County, is renamed Vancouver Barracks. This army post will become the oldest on the West Coast and the most historic in the Northwest. Vancouver Barracks will provide troops in the Indian Wars, Spanish-American War, World War I, and World War II. However, because Fort Vancouver lacked adequate maneuver and training space,

Fort Lewis in Pierce County will replace it as a major military installation. In 1946 the post will become an Army Reserve facility, and portions of it will later be turned over to the U.S. National Park Service's Fort Vancouver National Site, with the final United States Army parcel closing in 2011 upon completion of a new Army Reserve Center at a different Vancouver location. [File 9326: Full Text >](#)

p. 162 - Rocky Mountain Fur Company (0 files)

p. 163 – Benjamin Bonneville (Rocky Mountain Fur Company)

Bonneville Dam officially goes into service on June 6, 1938. On June 6, 1938, the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers officially places Bonneville Dam on the Columbia River into service. Bonneville is a run-of-the-river dam that will generate more than a million kilowatts of electricity, allow passage of shipping up and down the river, prevent flooding, and permit the migration of salmon. The dam will give its name to the Bonneville Power Administration created to distribute hydroelectric power produced by Columbia River dams. [File 7823: Full Text >](#)

p. 163 – Jedediah Smith (Rocky Mountain Fur Company)

p. 163 – Jim Bridger (Rocky Mountain Fur Company)

p. 163 – William Sublette (Rocky Mountain Fur Company)

CHAPTER 6: THE EARLY MISSIONARIES and PIONEERS, 1834-1847

p. 168 - Oregon Country

- [American settlers in Oregon declare a provisional government on May 2, 1843.](#) On May 2, 1843, following the first major influx of settlers, American citizens in "Oregon Country" meet to organize a provisional government for self-rule. The act challenges the Hudson's Bay Company and defacto British administration of the region under the 1818 Treaty of Joint Occupation. [File 5248: Full Text >](#)

p. 169 – Indian spiritual beliefs/shaman

Smohalla (1815?-1895) A Wanapum spiritual leader, Smohalla founded what became known as the Dreamer religion, which was based on the belief that if Native Americans shunned white culture and lived as their ancestors had lived, the Creator would reward them by bringing dead Indians back to life and ridding Indian lands of white people. His teachings spread rapidly among Columbia Plateau peoples in the late nineteenth century. To tribes which had been decimated by disease, pushed out of their traditional homelands, and otherwise dispirited by white encroachment, Smohalla offered hope for a restoration of freedom and dignity. To many whites, however, he represented a dangerous threat, not only to white expansion but to efforts to "civilize" the Indians. Widely feared and vilified in his own time, a century later he was installed in Washington's Centennial Hall of Honor as one of the 100 most influential people in state history. [File 9481: Full Text >](#)

p. 171 - Jason and Daniel Lee

Japanese Castaways of 1834: The Three Kichis The first Japanese known to have visited what is now Washington state arrived in a dismasted, rudderless ship that ran aground on the northernmost tip of the Olympic Peninsula sometime in January 1834. The ship had left its home port on the southeast coast of Japan in October 1832, with a crew of 14 and a cargo of rice and porcelain, on what was supposed to be a routine journey of a few hundred miles to Edo (Tokyo). Instead, it was hit by a typhoon and swept out to sea. It drifted across some 5,000 miles of ocean before finally reaching the Northwest coast with three survivors. Their names were Iwakichi, Kyukichi, and Otokichi. Found and briefly imprisoned by Makah Indians, the "three kichis" spent several months at Fort Vancouver before being sent on to London and eventually to China. They became pawns in the diplomatic chess game that governed Japan's relations with the outside world in the mid-nineteenth century, and were never able to return to their homeland. [File 9065: Full Text >](#)

p. 171 - John McLoughlin

McLoughlin, John (1784-1857) John McLoughlin was once the most powerful man in the Pacific Northwest. As Chief Factor of the Hudson's Bay Company's Columbia District from 1824 until 1846, he ruled a domain that stretched from the Rocky Mountains to the Pacific Ocean, as far north as Alaska and south into California. From his headquarters at Fort Vancouver, he managed an international trading network, maintained peace among dozens of Indian tribes, and provided critical aid to American missionaries and settlers. He earned great profits for his company and a respectable fortune for himself. But his superiors eventually lost faith in him and settlers who had once relied on his kindness and generosity came to resent his wealth and power. After being forced to resign from the company, he settled in Oregon City (near today's Portland), a town he had founded years earlier. Congress later passed a law that denied him legal title to much of the land he had claimed there. He died lonely and embittered in 1857. The honors were belated but abundant. His heirs regained title to the disputed land; his home and headquarters were preserved as national monuments; his statue was placed in the Capitol Building in Washington, D.C.; and his name was given to schools, parks, streets, bridges, even a mountain. He was informally christened the "Father of Oregon" in 1907, a title made official by the Oregon Legislature in 1957, a century after his death. [File 10617: Full Text >](#)

Hudson's Bay Company opens Fort Vancouver on March 19, 1825. On March 19, 1825, the Hudson's Bay Company opens Fort Vancouver on a bluff above the north bank of the Columbia River where the city of Vancouver, Clark County, is now located. For the next 20 years, the British-owned company, with its Fort Vancouver headquarters presided over by chief factor Dr. John McLoughlin (1784-1857), is the leading non-Indian presence in the region. [File 5251: Full Text >](#)

Hudson's Bay Company The Hudson's Bay Company, a fur-trading enterprise headquartered in London, began operations on the shores of Hudson Bay in 1670. During the next century and a half, it gradually expanded its network of trading posts west across Canada. In 1821, it merged with its prime rival, the North West Company out of Montreal, thus acquiring several posts in the Pacific Northwest. Under the leadership of Governor George Simpson (1787-1860) and Chief Factor John McLoughlin (1784-1857), the company dominated the land-based fur trade in the Northwest for the next four decades. After the Oregon Treaty of 1846 settled the international boundary at the 49th parallel, the company gradually phased out its operations in Oregon and Washington territories and moved its Northwest headquarters to Vancouver Island. [File 9881: Full Text >](#)

p. 171-2, 178 – Catholics missionaries

Catholicism in the Walla Walla Valley Roman Catholics were among the earliest explorers to enter the Pacific Northwest in the eighteenth century and they were among the earliest settlers in the region in the nineteenth century. The formal presence of the Roman Catholic Church began in 1838, when the first priests arrived under the direction of the Hudson's Bay Company, and established missions north and south of the Columbia River on the Cowlitz and Willamette rivers. A few years later, in 1841, another Catholic mission arrived from the United States. In 1846, the Northwest became an archdiocese and the Diocese of Walla Walla, extending between the Cascade and Rocky mountains and the Canadian and California borders, was established. After the Whitman massacre and resulting battles, the Diocese of Walla Walla was suppressed in 1853. Although the church tried to maintain its missions in the Walla Walla Valley during the conflicts of the 1850s, church activities were suspended for a few years until 1859, when Catholic institutions began to be established in the area. These included St. Patrick's Church (1859), St. Vincent's Academy (1864), and St. Mary's Hospital (1879). [File 9514: Full Text >](#)

Chirouse, Father Eugene Casimir (1821-1892) Catholic missionary Eugene Casimir Chirouse, Oblates of Mary Immaculate (O.M.I.), traveled from his native France to Oregon Territory with four Missionary Oblates and, after an arduous trip, arrived at Fort Walla Walla on October 5, 1847 -- only a month before the Whitman Massacre. Chirouse was ordained with Charles M. Pandosy (1824-1891) at Fort Walla Walla on January 2, 1848, the first Catholic ordination in what would become the state of Washington. Father Chirouse lived and worked among the Yakamas from 1848-1856 and for a short time was missionary to the Cayuse tribe. The Oblates attempted peacemaking during the tensions that culminated in the Yakama Indian War, but in 1857 were transferred to Olympia for their safety. Chirouse was assigned to oversee Puget Sound tribes and lived on the Tulalip reservation from 1857 to 1878. Here he established a school and church, the Mission of St. Anne, and helped to build missions on the Lummi and Port Madison reservations. Father Chirouse was a master of Salish dialects, translating the scriptures, authoring a grammar and a catechism, and creating an English-Salish/Salish-English dictionary. In his advancing years, the well-loved priest was transferred to a post in British Columbia, despite protests from his Tulalip parishioners. He returned to Tulalip many times to visit friends and to perform weddings and baptisms. Father Chirouse died in British Columbia in 1892. [File 9033: Full Text >](#)

Father Francois (or Francis) N. Blanchet and Rev. Modeste Demers arrive at Fort Vancouver on November 24, 1838. On November 24, 1838, Father Francois (or Francis) N. Blanchet (1795-1883) and the Rev. Modeste Demers (1809-1871) arrive at Fort Vancouver. They have traveled from eastern Canada with the annual Hudson's Bay Co. "express," leaving in May and arriving at Walla Walla on November 18, 1838. They are the first Catholic priests to arrive in the future Washington state. [File 7553: Full Text >](#)

Father Francis (or Francois) N. Blanchet visits Whidbey Island on May 26, 1840. On May 26, 1840, early missionary Father Francis N. Blanchet (1795-1883) comes to Whidbey Island at the invitation of Chief Tslalakum. [File 5258: Full Text >](#)

St. Anne's Mission is established on Umatilla River on November 27, 1847. On Saturday, November 27, 1847, the Roman Catholic Bishop of Walla Walla, Augustin Magliore Alexander Blanchet (1797-1887), and John Baptist Abraham Brouillet (1813-1884) leave Fort Walla Walla and establish St. Anne's Mission in a cabin on the Umatilla River. Blanchet, Brouillet, and others had arrived at Fort Walla Walla in September and had spent October making preparations to open this mission and another at the confluence of the Yakima and Columbia rivers. Two days after Blanchet and Brouillet open St. Anne's, Protestant missionaries Marcus (1802-1847) and Narcissa Whitman (1808-1847) and others will be killed at the Waiilatpu mission. St. Anne's Mission will be abandoned, burned, reestablished, burned again, abandoned again, and reestablished again before its mission will be resumed. [File 9515: Full Text >](#)

Walla Walla Frenchtown is established about 1824. Around 1824, the Walla Walla Frenchtown is established near the mouth of the Walla Walla River. The community is associated with the Hudson's Bay Company post first built by the French Canadian Northwest Company in 1818 as Fort Nez Perces and later, after the Hudson's Bay Co. and the Northwest Co. merge, renamed Fort Walla Walla. Frenchtown is a general designation used throughout North America for locations characterized by the early settlement of people of French extraction. Frenchtowns are often associated with early fur-trading posts, especially those of the Hudson's Bay Company, but are typically located at some distance from the posts. This Frenchtown, like others, will outlive the fur-trading posts because its inhabitants will maintain their French Canadian character through common architectural forms, land division patterns, and the Roman Catholic religion. [File 8615: Full Text >](#)

Father Francois (or Francis) N. Blanchet and Rev. Modeste Demers arrive at Fort Vancouver on November 24, 1838. On November 24, 1838, Father Francois (or Francis) N. Blanchet (1795-1883) and the Rev. Modeste Demers (1809-1871) arrive at Fort Vancouver. They have traveled from eastern Canada with the annual Hudson's Bay Co. "express," leaving in May and arriving at Walla Walla on November 18, 1838. They are the first Catholic priests to arrive in the future Washington state.

[File 7553: Full Text >](#)

Sisters of Providence arrive at Fort Vancouver on December 8, 1856. On December 8, 1856, five Sisters of Providence, Roman Catholic nuns, arrive at Fort Vancouver, Washington. Sister Joseph (formerly Esther Pariseau) (1823-1902) is their leader. She will later be known as Mother Joseph, the Northwest's first architect. [File 5207: Full Text >](#)

Saint Joseph's Mission at Ahtanum Creek is founded in the Yakima Valley on April 3, 1852. On April 3, 1852, Father Louis Joseph D'herbomez and Father Charles M. Pandosy found a mission on Ahtanum Creek in what will become known as the Yakima Valley. They call the mission Saint Joseph (not Sainte Croix as some sources erroneously state). The Mission is burned down during the Yakima Indian War of 1855. [File 5285: Full Text >](#)

Saint Joseph's Mission at Ahtanum Creek is founded in the Yakima Valley on April 3, 1852. On April 3, 1852, Father Louis Joseph D'herbomez and Father Charles M. Pandosy found a mission on Ahtanum Creek in what will become known as the Yakima Valley. They call the mission Saint Joseph (not Sainte Croix as some sources erroneously state). The Mission is burned down during the Yakima Indian War of 1855. [File 5285: Full Text >](#)

First irrigation ditch in the Yakima Valley is dug at the Saint Joseph Mission in 1852. In 1852, Catholic Missionary Oblates of Mary Immaculate Father Charles Pandosy and Father Eugene Casmire Chirouse (1821-1892), in company with Yakama people, labor with shovels to dig the first irrigation ditch in the Yakima Valley. In time irrigation will so transform the natural sagebrush desert (an ecology known as shrub-steppe) that the Yakima Valley will become known as the fruit bowl of the nation. [File 5288: Full Text >](#)

p. 171-2 – Protestant missionaries

Columbia Maternal Association The Columbia Maternal Association -- the first women's club in what is now Washington state -- was organized in 1838 by the wives of six pioneer missionaries. Only two of the women were mothers at the time, but two others were pregnant, and they all expected that motherhood would be among their primary roles in life. Isolated in what they considered a "heathen land," far from family and friends, they turned to each other for help in "the right performance of our Maternal duties" (constitution of the Columbia Maternal Association). The women had been familiar with such groups through Protestant church circles in their home towns in New England and upstate New York. By creating an association of their own, they connected not only with each other but with the worlds they had left behind. [File 9272: Full Text >](#)

p. 174-5 - Dr. Marcus Whitman and Narcissa (Protestant missionaries)

Whitman, Narcissa Prentiss (1808-1847) Narcissa Whitman might have lived out her life in historical obscurity but for two developments. The first was her decision, in 1836, to marry a missionary named Marcus Whitman and travel with him to what was then called Oregon Country, some 3,000 miles from her home in upstate New York. The second was her death 11 years later, at the hands of Cayuse Indians at the mission she and her husband had established near Walla Walla. The Whitmans set out to Christianize and “civilize” a people they considered “heathen.” They soon gave up trying to convert Indians and instead turned their mission into a way station for white emigrants on the Oregon Trail. Long-simmering tensions erupted on November 29, 1847, when the Cayuse attacked the mission, killing the Whitmans and 11 others. The attack led to a war against the Cayuse and the extension of federal authority over the present-day states of Washington, Idaho, and Oregon and parts of Montana and Wyoming. It also helped make Narcissa – the only woman to be killed – a symbol of the cultural clashes that played out between whites and Indians throughout the West. [File 10088: Full Text >](#)

Whitman, Marcus (1802-1847) Marcus Whitman, a man with unwavering cultural and religious convictions, was one of the first missionaries in the Northwest. He and his wife, Narcissa, established a mission on Cayuse land near Walla Walla in 1836. Their goal was to Christianize and "civilize" Indians. Relations between the couple and their hosts were initially cordial but deteriorated in the face of mutual distrust and disappointment. Whitman soon gave up the idea of ministering to Indians and focused instead on helping white emigrants. Long-simmering tensions erupted on November 29, 1847, when a group of Cayuses attacked the mission, killing the Whitmans and 11 others. The "Whitman Massacre" spurred Congress to establish federal control over the present-day states of Washington, Oregon, Idaho, and parts of Montana and Wyoming. Whitman, who might otherwise have faded into obscurity, instead became one of the most memorialized figures in Washington history. His statue stands in the Capitol Building in Washington, D.C.; his birthday is a state holiday; his former mission is a National Historic Site; and a county, a college, a forest, a dozen public schools, and numerous other enterprises -- from an upscale hotel in Walla Walla to a church in Des Moines -- carry his name. [File 10912: Full Text >](#)

Missionaries Marcus and Narcissa Whitman begin their journey to the Northwest, one day after their wedding, on February 19, 1836. On February 19, 1836 -- one day after their wedding -- missionaries Marcus Whitman (1802-1847) and Narcissa Prentiss Whitman (1808-1847) begin a seven-month, 3,000-mile journey from New York State to the Pacific Northwest. Their goal is to Christianize and "civilize" Indians in what is then known as Oregon Country. After arriving, they will establish a Protestant mission on Cayuse land at Waiilatpu, near present-day Walla Walla, Washington. Eleven years later, a group of Cayuses will attack the mission, killing the Whitmans and 11 others in what will become known as the "Whitman Massacre." [File 10777: Full Text >](#)

Whitman-Spalding missionary party arrives at Fort Vancouver on September 12, 1836. On September 12, 1836, missionaries Marcus Whitman (1802-1847) and Henry Spalding (1803-1874) and their respective wives, Narcissa (1808-1847) and Eliza (1807-1851), arrive at Fort Vancouver after a seven-month, 3,000-mile journey overland from their homes in upstate New York. Narcissa and Eliza are the first white women to cross the Rocky Mountains. The Whitmans will go on to establish a mission among the Cayuse Indians at Waiilatpu, near present-day Walla Walla, Washington; the Spaldings, among the Nez Perce at Lapwai, in what is now Idaho. Both missions will be closed after long-simmering tensions erupt 11 years later and the Cayuse attack the Whitman mission, killing the Whitmans and 11 others. [File 9700: Full Text >](#)

Dr. Marcus Whitman establishes a mission at Waiilatpu on October 16, 1836. On October 16, 1836, Dr. Marcus Whitman (1802-1847), a Presbyterian missionary and a physician, establishes a mission at Waiilatpu on the Walla Walla River. He chooses the site because of its proximity to the Cayuse tribe and to the Hudson's Bay Company post at Fort Walla Walla. Whitman will assist many wagon-train immigrants from the United States, but will convert few of the natives. In 1847, members of the Cayuse tribe will murder Whitman and other whites at Waiilatpu. [File 5191: Full Text >](#)

Missionary women organize the Columbia Maternal Association, the first women's club in the Northwest, on September 3, 1838. On September 3, 1838, the wives of six pioneer missionaries meet at the Whitman mission at

Waiilatpu (near present-day Walla Walla) and organize the Columbia Maternal Association, the first women's club in the Northwest. It is the first and only time the charter members -- assigned to widely separated missions -- are able to gather together in person. Instead, the women (and seven others who join later) hold something like virtual meetings. They set aside an appointed hour, twice a month, for club activities, sometimes in the company of one or two other women but often alone. The association continues to function in this manner until 1847, when an Indian attack on the Whitman mission leads to the closure of all Protestant missions in the Northwest. [File 9236: Full Text >](#)

Columbia Maternal Association The Columbia Maternal Association -- the first women's club in what is now Washington state -- was organized in 1838 by the wives of six pioneer missionaries. Only two of the women were mothers at the time, but two others were pregnant, and they all expected that motherhood would be among their primary roles in life. Isolated in what they considered a "heathen land," far from family and friends, they turned to each other for help in "the right performance of our Maternal duties" (constitution of the Columbia Maternal Association). The women had been familiar with such groups through Protestant church circles in their home towns in New England and upstate New York. By creating an association of their own, they connected not only with each other but with the worlds they had left behind.

[File 9272: Full Text >](#)

Cayuse attack mission in what becomes known as the Whitman Massacre on November 29, 1847. On November 29, 1847, Cayuse tribal members attack white settlers and missionaries at Waiilatpu in what will become known as the Whitman Massacre. Thirteen whites are killed during three days of bloodshed, most of them on the first day; another is believed to have drowned after escaping the initial attack. [File 5192: Full Text >](#)

Cayuse Indians The Cayuse Indians were once masters of a vast homeland of more than six million acres in what is now Washington and Oregon. The first of the Northwest tribes to acquire horses, they were relatively few in number but outsized in influence, noted for their shrewd bargaining ability and much feared as warriors. Fur trader Alexander Ross (1783-1856) described them as "by far the most powerful and warlike" of the tribes on the Columbia Plateau in 1818. They were at the peak of their power in 1836, when they invited Marcus (1802-1847) and Narcissa (1808-1847) Whitman to establish a mission on Cayuse land near Walla Walla. What began as accommodation ended in disillusionment and resentment. A group of Cayuse attacked the mission in November 1847, killing the Whitmans and 11 others -- a brief flurry of violence that led to the first Indian war in the Northwest, the creation of Oregon Territory as a federal entity, and, eventually, a treaty that stripped the tribe of most of its land. But that was not the end of the story. As historian Clifford Trafzer has pointed out, "Their lives did not end in the last century, and their cultures did not fade away" (Trafzer, 7). The Cayuse survive as part of the Confederated Tribes of the Umatilla, with a 172,000-acre reservation near Pendleton, Oregon; an annual operating budget of nearly \$230 million; and businesses ranging from a casino to a wind farm. In the words of a tribal brochure, "We are still here. We will continue to be here." [File 10365: Full Text >](#)

p. 174-5 - Henry and Eliza Spalding (Protestant missionaries)

Whitman-Spalding missionary party arrives at Fort Vancouver on September 12, 1836. On September 12, 1836, missionaries Marcus Whitman (1802-1847) and Henry Spalding (1803-1874) and their respective wives, Narcissa (1808-1847) and Eliza (1807-1851), arrive at Fort Vancouver after a seven-month, 3,000-mile journey overland from their homes in upstate New York. Narcissa and Eliza are the first white women to cross the Rocky Mountains. The Whitmans will go on to establish a mission among the Cayuse Indians at Waiilatpu, near present-day Walla Walla, Washington; the Spaldings, among the Nez Perce at Lapwai, in what is now Idaho. Both missions will be closed after long-simmering tensions erupt 11 years later and the Cayuse attack the Whitman mission, killing the Whitmans and 11 others. [File 9700: Full Text >](#)

p. 174 – Waitatpu and Lapwai Missions

Whitman-Spalding missionary party arrives at Fort Vancouver on September 12, 1836. On September 12, 1836, missionaries Marcus Whitman (1802-1847) and Henry Spalding (1803-1874) and their respective wives, Narcissa (1808-1847) and Eliza (1807-1851), arrive at Fort Vancouver after a seven-month, 3,000-mile journey overland from their homes in upstate New York. Narcissa and Eliza are the first white women to cross the Rocky Mountains. The Whitmans will go on to establish a mission among the Cayuse Indians at Waiilatpu, near present-day Walla Walla, Washington; the Spaldings, among the Nez Perce at Lapwai, in what is now Idaho. Both missions will be closed after long-simmering tensions erupt 11 years later and the Cayuse attack the Whitman mission, killing the Whitmans and 11 others. [File 9700: Full Text >](#)

The Spokane Mission: Nine Years of Love and Conflict Robert A. Clark authored two books and numerous magazine articles dealing with the Old West. He operates Arthur H. Clark Company, in Spokane, publishers of books on the American frontier experience. His account of the mission at Tshimikain originally appeared in *The Pacific Northwesterner*, Vol. 38, No. 1 (Winter 1994), published by the Spokane Corral of the Westerners. It is here reprinted by permission. [File 7260: Full Text >](#)

Walla Walla -- Thumbnail History The City of Walla Walla, located in southeastern Washington, is one of the oldest cities in the state. The area surrounding the city, the Walla Walla Valley, has been the scene of a long and diverse history that includes native North Americans, explorers Meriwether Lewis (1774-1809) and William Clark (1770-1838), fur traders, missionaries Marcus (1802-1847) and Narcissa Whitman (1808-1847), soldiers, gold prospectors, pioneers, and others. The town of Walla Walla developed around the U.S. military Fort Walla Walla in the late 1850s. It was named and platted in 1859, and incorporated and named the seat of Walla Walla County in 1862. A gold rush in the early 1860s, followed by a growing agricultural industry, made Walla Walla the largest city in Washington Territory by 1880. Since the late nineteenth century, the City of Walla Walla has been the center of a region known for its agricultural products, including wheat, barley, corn, potatoes, asparagus, peas, soft fruit, onions, and grapes. Following the establishment of the Walla Walla Valley as a unique American Viticultural Area in 1984, the city has been at the center of a burgeoning premium wine industry. With a population of 30,900 (as of 2007), Walla Walla is the largest city in Walla Walla County. [File 8486: Full Text >](#)

p. 176 – Tshimakain Mission

The Spokane Mission: Nine Years of Love and Conflict Robert A. Clark authored two books and numerous magazine articles dealing with the Old West. He operates Arthur H. Clark Company, in Spokane, publishers of books on the American frontier experience. His account of the mission at Tshimikain originally appeared in *The Pacific Northwesterner*, Vol. 38, No. 1 (Winter 1994), published by the Spokane Corral of the Westerners. It is here reprinted by permission. [File 7260: Full Text >](#)

Fort Colvile (Hudson's Bay Company), 1825-1871 Fort Colvile, located near Kettle Falls, was established by the British Hudson's Bay Company (HBC) in 1825 when it moved its upper Columbia Basin fur-trading operations to this new location from Spokane House (established in 1810). The new post was christened Fort Colvile, after HBC official Andrew Colvile. Over the years the post grew, eventually comprising the store, warehouses, shops, stockades and a bastion, dwellings, and out buildings, as well as large land holdings for agriculture and livestock pasture. As a major way point for travelers in the Inland Northwest, Fort Colvile received many visitors, who are the main sources of information for what the post looked like. These accounts are indispensable, for hardly a trace of the place was left after a 1910 fire burned down what was left after 85 years. The post had gone into decline after the 1846 settlement of the American/Canadian border dispute, which left Fort Colvile in U.S. hands. Soon, the American military had established its own Fort Colville, with a slightly different spelling, leaving the old British-

Canadian post to enter a long spiral of decay. The Hudson's Bay Company ended its occupation of Fort Colville on June 8, 1871. The site was inundated by Lake Roosevelt in the early 1950s, following the construction of the Grand Coulee Dam. [File 9235: Full Text >](#)

p. 176 -- Elkanah and Mary Walker (Protestant missionaries)

Walker, Mary Richardson (1811-1897) As a young girl in Maine, Mary Richardson set her mind to become a missionary. Upon marrying Elkanah Walker in 1837, the couple set out for the Oregon Country. They settled among the Spokane Indians to teach and preach at their mission, Tshimakain, located 25 miles northwest of present day Spokane. Mary's intimate 125,000-word diary tells of crossing the continent with fur traders, building a rustic shelter in the wilderness, ministering to the Indians, and raising a family under trying conditions. Her words reveal her frustrations, spirit, honesty, and perseverance. She is a symbol of the strength of all pioneer women. Following the murder of the Dr. Marcus Whitman party, near Walla Walla, Mary and her family moved themselves to the peaceful Willamette Valley where they spent the rest of their lives. The work of missionaries paved the way for the next wave of pioneers to cross the Rockies to Oregon. [File 7204: Full Text >](#)

William Three Mountains the Elder and William Three Mountains the Younger William Three Mountains the Elder (ca. 1823-1883) and his son, William Three Mountains the Younger (1864-1937), served as important leaders of the Spokane tribe from the fur trade and missionary periods of the 1830s through the dam-building era of the 1930s. The Three Mountains name appears in documents relating to the 1858 Indian Wars, the treaty negotiations and reservation establishment of the 1880s, and the tribe's legal battles into the early twentieth century. They both were independent thinkers whose social and political stances were sometimes at odds with the positions of other tribal leaders as well as those of white officials. Many of the difficult issues they confronted still resonate through the tribal world. [File 9523: Full Text >](#)

p. 176 – Cushing and Myra Eells

Chewelah -- Thumbnail History Few Washington towns can claim a more idyllic setting than Chewelah, located some 45 miles north of Spokane in the southern Colville River valley in Stevens County. To the east, the dark bulk of Quartzite Mountain, part of the Selkirks, broods over the town. To the west, across the valley, rise the Huckleberry Mountains. This region was once the home of Indians, particularly Colvilles and a few Spokanes and Kalispels. Then fur traders and missionaries passed through. Beginning in the 1840s, French-Canadian, Scottish, and mixed-race former employees of the old Hudson's Bay Company Fort Colville (HBC spelling) began farming in the Chewelah area. Pioneer settlement from elsewhere began in the 1850s, drawn to opportunities for mining, logging, and ranching. Conveniently for settlers as well as miners on their way to points farther north, the future town site lay near the Colville Road, the main route between military forts Walla Walla and Colville. Chewelah's greatest economic boosts came in 1889 with the arrival of railroad service and in 1916 with a decades-long magnesite boom. The town's recovery from the loss in 1968 of this industry is a study in community self-help that continues today and bodes well for the future. [File 9534: Full Text >](#)

Myron Eells dies on January 4, 1907, and leaves his historical collections to Whitman College. On January 4, 1907, Pacific Northwest native, missionary, scholar, and collector Myron Eells (1843-1907) dies. Within a month of his death, his significant collections of books, papers, and artifacts will be donated to Whitman College, where they will become important nuclei of the college's library, archives, and museum. [File 8336: Full Text >](#)

p. 178 – Roman Catholic Missionaries/Black Robes/nuns

Sisters of Providence arrive at Fort Vancouver on December 8, 1856. On December 8, 1856, five Sisters of Providence, Roman Catholic nuns, arrive at Fort Vancouver, Washington. Sister Joseph (formerly Esther Pariseau) (1823-1902) is their leader. She will later be known as Mother Joseph, the Northwest's first architect. [File 5207: Full Text >](#)

p. 178 – Father Francois Blanchet and Father Modeste Demers

Father Francois (or Francis) N. Blanchet and Rev. Modeste Demers arrive at Fort Vancouver on November 24, 1838. On November 24, 1838, Father Francois (or Francis) N. Blanchet (1795-1883) and the Rev. Modeste Demers (1809-1871) arrive at Fort Vancouver. They have traveled from eastern Canada with the annual Hudson's Bay Co. "express," leaving in May and arriving at Walla Walla on November 18, 1838. They are the first Catholic priests to arrive in the future Washington state. [File 7553: Full Text >](#)

Father Francis (or Francois) N. Blanchet visits Whidbey Island on May 26, 1840. On May 26, 1840, early missionary Father Francis N. Blanchet (1795-1883) comes to Whidbey Island at the invitation of Chief Tslalakum. [File 5258: Full Text >](#)

p. 179 – Father Pierre Jean De Smet

Bishop Augustin Blanchet dedicates Washington's original St. James Cathedral at Fort Vancouver on January 23, 1851. On January 23, 1851, Bishop Augustin Magloire Alexandre (A. M. A.) Blanchet (1797-1887) consecrates as a Catholic cathedral a rustic missionary church on land adjacent to the Hudson's Bay Company's Fort Vancouver headquarters. The wooden structure is built and paid for by Hudson's Bay at the request of Francis N. Blanchet (1795-1883), Father A. M. A. Blanchet's brother and the first Archbishop of the see, or diocese, of Oregon City. After serving as a simple parish church for the Roman Catholic residents of Fort Vancouver and the surrounding area, its status is upgraded to cathedral when the Nesqually (later Nisqually) diocese is created and A. M. A. Blanchet is appointed bishop. It will serve as the seat of the diocese until 1885, when a much grander St. James Cathedral is completed in the City of Vancouver. The new cathedral will be the headquarters of the church in Western Washington for more than two decades, then will revert to a parish church when Bishop Edward J. O'Dea (1856-1932) moves the diocese to Seattle and builds a new St. James Cathedral. [File 9126: Full Text >](#)

Kettle Falls Kettle Falls, on the upper Columbia River about 40 miles south of the Canadian border, was once one of the most important fishing and gathering places for Native Americans in the Northwest. Salish speakers called it Shonitkwu, meaning roaring or noisy waters. The sound of the river, plunging nearly 50 feet in a series of cascades, could be heard for miles. It was said that the salmon ran so thick here that it was impossible to throw a stick into the water without hitting a fish. All this came to an end in 1941, with the completion of Grand Coulee Dam, located about 100 miles downstream. The dam, built without a passage for fish, closed the upper Columbia and its tributaries to migrating salmon. Today, the noise at Kettle Falls comes not from rushing water but from nearby Highway 395. The falls themselves are just slabs of quartzite, buried deep beneath the surface of a reservoir called Franklin D. Roosevelt Lake. [File 7577: Full Text >](#)

Metaline Falls -- Thumbnail History The town of Metaline Falls lies on the banks of the Pend Oreille River in a heavily wooded valley approximately 83 miles north of Spokane. Native Americans occupied the area for thousands of years before the first white explorer, David Thompson (1770-1857) of the North West Company, passed through in 1809. Outcroppings of exposed minerals led early non-Indian arrivals to name the area the "Metalines." The first

substantial influx of non-Indians did not arrive until gold was discovered in the late 1850s. Valuable deposits of lead and zinc were later found, but could not be profitably exploited until the railroad reached Metaline Falls in 1910. The economic core of Metaline Falls for much of the twentieth century was the Lehigh Portland Cement Company, sustained by abundant surface deposits of quartz and limestone. In the second quarter of the century the Metaline Mining District became the state's largest supplier of lead and zinc, and during World War II "soldier-miners" were deployed to help extract the metals for the war effort. The region's primary industries -- mining, logging, and especially cement -- declined during the 1970s, and the town now survives as a wilderness gateway for outdoor enthusiasts and a home to a thriving and nationally recognized art community. [File 9216: Full Text >](#)

p. 182 – Great Migration (see Oregon Trail)

p. 182 – Panic of 1837 (see Oregon Trail)

p. 184 – Jason Lee (Marcus Whitman)

[Japanese Castaways of 1834: The Three Kichis](#) The first Japanese known to have visited what is now Washington state arrived in a dismasted, rudderless ship that ran aground on the northernmost tip of the Olympic Peninsula sometime in January 1834. The ship had left its home port on the southeast coast of Japan in October 1832, with a crew of 14 and a cargo of rice and porcelain, on what was supposed to be a routine journey of a few hundred miles to Edo (Tokyo). Instead, it was hit by a typhoon and swept out to sea. It drifted across some 5,000 miles of ocean before finally reaching the Northwest coast with three survivors. Their names were Iwakichi, Kyukichi, and Otokichi. Found and briefly imprisoned by Makah Indians, the "three kichis" spent several months at Fort Vancouver before being sent on to London and eventually to China. They became pawns in the diplomatic chess game that governed Japan's relations with the outside world in the mid-nineteenth century, and were never able to return to their homeland. [File 9065: Full Text >](#)

p. 185 – John C. Fremont

p. 185 – Oregon Trail

[Donation Land Claim Act, spur to American settlement of Oregon Territory, takes effect on September 27, 1850.](#) On September 27, 1850, the Donation Land Claim Act of 1850 takes effect. The act creates a powerful incentive for settlement of the Oregon Territory by offering 320 acres at no charge to qualifying adult U.S. citizens (640 acres to married couples) who occupy their claims for four consecutive years. Amendments in 1853 and 1854 continue the program, but cut the size of allowable claims by half. [File 9501: Full Text >](#)

[Michael T. Simmons settles at Tumwater in October 1845.](#) In late October 1845, Michael T. Simmons (1814-1867) of Kentucky, Iowa, and Missouri settles at Tumwater near the Falls of the Deschutes River. Tum-wa-ta is a Chinook Jargon word for strong water or waterfall. Simmons calls the location New Market to signify that there is an alternative to the Hudson's Bay Company post at Nisqually. It is the first American settlement in what would become the state of Washington. [File 5089: Full Text >](#)

[John Holgate explores the Duwamish River by canoe but does not stake King County land claim during the summer of 1850.](#) During the summer of 1850, John Cornelius Holgate (1828-1868) canoes up Puget Sound from the village of Olympia. He explores the Duwamish River, and considers settling on the site (the future Georgetown) claimed the following year by King County's first white settlers -- Luther M. Collins (1813-1860), Henry Van Asselt (1817-1902), Jacob Maple (or Mapel) (1798-1884), and Samuel Maple (1827-1880). Historian Edmond Meany

(writing in 1909) and others incorrectly give the honor of "the first settler of Seattle" to Holgate, writing that he selected land but neglected to register his claim. [File 1749: Full Text >](#)

Isaac Ebey is the first permanent U.S. settler on Whidbey Island on October 15, 1850. On October 15, 1850, Col. Isaac N. Ebey (1818-1857) files a claim on Whidbey Island under the Donation Land Law, less than a month after its passage. [File 5300: Full Text >](#)

Bagley, Daniel (1818-1905) and Clarence B. Bagley (1843-1932) Daniel Bagley was a Methodist preacher who traveled west in covered wagons with his family in 1852 as part of the Bethel Party. He and his wife Susannah Whipple Bagley (1819-1913) and son Clarence Bagley arrived in Seattle in October 1860. Daniel Bagley established the Brown Church in Seattle in 1860 and besides preaching became a key advocate for the Territorial University and its location in Seattle. He also managed the Newcastle coal mines. His only son, Clarence Bagley, was 17 when he arrived in Seattle. He became a printer, publisher, and writer, a founder of the Washington State Historical Society, and the region's first and preeminent historian. [File 3470: Full Text >](#)

Denny Party on the Oregon Trail by Dorothea Nordstrand This account of the Denny Party's journey to the Pacific Northwest from Illinois was written by Dorothea Nordstrand (1916-2011). Nordstrand writes: When I started school in 1921 at the old Green Lake School, two of my classmates were Denny Grindall and Loretta Jennings, who were cousins. I believe they were both descendants of Arthur Denny. Perhaps that triggered my interest in the Dennys. In any case, I have always enjoyed reading about that family and have gathered much information over the years. This is the story of their journey to the Pacific Northwest on the Oregon Trail. [File 5647: Full Text >](#)

Denny party lands at Alki Point near future Seattle on November 13, 1851. On November 13, 1851, the Denny Party lands at Alki Point, not far from the site of the future Seattle. [File 5392: Full Text >](#)

Bell, William Nathaniel (1817-1887) William Nathaniel Bell and his wife Sarah Ann (Peter) Bell (1819-1856) were members of the Denny party that arrived on Alki (present-day West Seattle) on the schooner *Exact* in 1851. The Bells helped to establish the settlement that became Seattle, settling north of the future downtown in "Belltown." After Indians attacked Seattle on January 26, 1856, William Bell and his ailing wife left Seattle for California. Sarah Ann died that year, but Bell did not return until 1870. He sold some of his lots, which had become valuable, built the Hotel Bellevue, and engaged in other businesses. [File 2015: Full Text >](#)

Meeker, Ezra (1830-1928) Ezra Meeker (1830-1928) was a Washington pioneer, successful hops farmer, merchant, and an influential advocate for preserving the Oregon Trail. With his wife Eliza Jane Sumner Meeker (1834-1909) he founded the town of Puyallup on the land surrounding their small cabin. Meeker represented Washington Territory and later the state of Washington in several major expositions in America and abroad. From 1906 until his death in 1928 Ezra Meeker devoted the majority of his time and energy to ensuring that the old emigrant trail used by more than half a million pioneers from 1841 to 1869 was marked and preserved, and that the memory of those pioneers was venerated. Ezra Meeker's steady insistence that the emigrant route deserved preservation and persistent publicizing of this cause ensured that the historical phenomena and literal pathway now known as the Oregon Trail were not forgotten. [File 7737: Full Text >](#)

p. 190 – Treaty of Oregon

Great Britain and the United States sign the Treaty of Joint Occupation of Oregon on October 20, 1818. On October 20, 1818, in order to improve relations in the wake of the War of 1812, Great Britain and the United States agree to peaceful coexistence in the Pacific Northwest by signing the Convention of 1818 (commonly known as the Treaty of Joint Occupation) in London. [File 5103: Full Text >](#)

Britain cedes its claims to the Pacific Northwest by signing the Treaty of Oregon on June 15, 1846. On June 15, 1846, after 28 years of peaceful "joint occupancy" with the United States, Britain surrenders its claims to the "Oregon Country" south of the 49th parallel by signing the Treaty of Oregon. [File 5247: Full Text >](#)

p. 191 – Wilkes Expedition

Wilkes, Charles (1798-1877) Lt. Charles Wilkes led the first U.S. Navy expedition to explore the Pacific Ocean in 1838. He surveyed Puget Sound and named dozens of bays, coves, rivers, islands, and land formations, including Elliott Bay, in 1841. Wilkes' obsessive behavior and harsh code of shipboard discipline reportedly shaped Herman Melville's characterization of Ahab in *Moby Dick*. [File 5226: Full Text >](#)

CHAPTER 7: TERRITORIAL GOVERNMENT and INDIAN WARS, 1847-1877

p. 200 – Whitman Massacre

Walla Walla -- Thumbnail History The City of Walla Walla, located in southeastern Washington, is one of the oldest cities in the state. The area surrounding the city, the Walla Walla Valley, has been the scene of a long and diverse history that includes native North Americans, explorers Meriwether Lewis (1774-1809) and William Clark (1770-1838), fur traders, missionaries Marcus (1802-1847) and Narcissa Whitman (1808-1847), soldiers, gold prospectors, pioneers, and others. The town of Walla Walla developed around the U.S. military Fort Walla Walla in the late 1850s. It was named and platted in 1859, and incorporated and named the seat of Walla Walla County in 1862. A gold rush in the early 1860s, followed by a growing agricultural industry, made Walla Walla the largest city in Washington Territory by 1880. Since the late nineteenth century, the City of Walla Walla has been the center of a region known for its agricultural products, including wheat, barley, corn, potatoes, asparagus, peas, soft fruit, onions, and grapes. Following the establishment of the Walla Walla Valley as a unique American Viticultural Area in 1984, the city has been at the center of a burgeoning premium wine industry. With a population of 30,900 (as of 2007), Walla Walla is the largest city in Walla Walla County. [File 8486: Full Text >](#)

Cayuse attack mission in what becomes known as the Whitman Massacre on November 29, 1847. On November 29, 1847, Cayuse tribal members attack white settlers and missionaries at Waiilatpu in what will become known as the Whitman Massacre. Thirteen whites are killed during three days of bloodshed, most of them on the first day; another is believed to have drowned after escaping the initial attack. [File 5192: Full Text >](#)

Cayuse Indians The Cayuse Indians were once masters of a vast homeland of more than six million acres in what is now Washington and Oregon. The first of the Northwest tribes to acquire horses, they were relatively few in number but outsized in influence, noted for their shrewd bargaining ability and much feared as warriors. Fur trader Alexander Ross (1783-1856) described them as "by far the most powerful and warlike" of the tribes on the Columbia Plateau in 1818. They were at the peak of their power in 1836, when they invited Marcus (1802-1847) and Narcissa (1808-1847) Whitman to establish a mission on Cayuse land near Walla Walla. What began as accommodation ended in disillusionment and resentment. A group of Cayuse attacked the mission in November 1847, killing the Whitmans and 11 others -- a brief flurry of violence that led to the first Indian war in the Northwest, the creation of Oregon Territory as a federal entity, and, eventually, a treaty that stripped the tribe of most of its land. But that was not the end of the story. As historian Clifford Trafzer has pointed out, "Their lives did not end in the last century, and their cultures did not fade away" (Trafzer, 7). The Cayuse survive as part of the Confederated Tribes of the Umatilla, with a 172,000-acre reservation near Pendleton, Oregon; an annual operating budget of nearly \$230 million; and businesses ranging from a casino to a wind farm. In the words of a tribal brochure, "We are still here. We will continue to be here." [File 10365: Full Text >](#)

p. 200 – measles epidemic

Smallpox Epidemic of 1862 among Northwest Coast and Puget Sound Indians This file describes the 1862 smallpox epidemic among Northwest Coast tribes. It was carried from San Francisco on the steamship *Brother Jonathan* and arrived at Victoria, British Columbia, on March 12, 1862. White officials vaccinated as many whites as possible and very few Indians. When Indians camped near Victoria began dying of smallpox, Vancouver Island authorities forced them to leave. The Indians returned to their homelands, causing the disease to spread north from Vancouver Island to southern Alaska, and south into the Puget Sound region. As Robert Boyd writes in his seminal work, *The Coming of the Spirit of Pestilence*, "this [Indian] epidemic might have been avoided, and the Whites knew it." Boyd estimates that from April to December 1862, 14,000 Native Americans perished, about half the Indians living along the coast from Victoria to Alaska. [File 5171: Full Text >](#)

Smallpox kills 14,000 Northwest Coast Indians from April to December 1862. On March 12, 1862, smallpox (*variola major*) arrives at Victoria, British Columbia, carried from San Francisco on the steamship *Brother Jonathan*. The catastrophic 1862 smallpox epidemic among Northwest Coast tribes is allowed to spread through the policy of white officials who vaccinated as many whites as possible and very few Indians. [File 3176: Full Text >](#)

Turning Point 16: When Worlds Collide: From Contact to Conquest on Puget Sound The 16th essay in HistoryLink's Turning Point series for *The Seattle Times* focuses on the cultural interactions between Puget Sound's Native peoples and the first European explorers and early settlers. While generally friendly, Indians suffered greatly through exposure to smallpox and other diseases, and later, deliberate efforts to occupy their lands and erase their traditions. Greg Lange conducted the primary research for this article, with special review by scholars Kenneth "Greg" Watson and John Findlay, Ph.D. It was written by Walt Crowley and Priscilla Long and was published in two parts on October 11 and 12, 2001. [File 9294: Full Text >](#)

p, 201 – Tilaukait and Tomahas

Trial of five Cayuse accused of Whitman murder begins on May 21, 1850. On May 21, 1850, the trial of five Cayuse men accused of murdering Protestant missionary Marcus Whitman begins in Oregon City, capital of the newly organized Oregon Territory. Whitman, his wife Narcissa, and 11 others had been killed during a Cayuse attack on the Whitman Mission near Walla Walla two and a half years earlier. The defendants were indicted on several charges associated with the attack but were tried on only a single count, that of "feloniously, wilfully and of their malice aforethought" killing "one Marcus Whitman" (Grand Jury indictment No. 11). The trial lasts four days and ends when all five defendants are convicted and sentenced to death by hanging. [File 9401: Full Text >](#)

p. 201 – Cayuse War

Washington Territorial Volunteers kill 50 Cayuse in the Grande Ronde Valley on July 17, 1856. On July 17, 1856, Washington Territorial Volunteers under Lieutenant Colonel Benjamin F. Shaw attack a camp of Cayuse Indians in the Grande Ronde Valley in Oregon Territory. Shaw had been assigned to suppress hostile tribes and the volunteers made little distinction between hostile, neutral, and friendly tribes. The volunteers kill at least 50 people, many of them women and children, burn Indian foodstuffs and 120 lodges, and kill horses. This aggression inflames non-hostile tribes and will be an important reason that the Second Walla Walla Council fails to result in treaties between the Indians and the United States. [File 8146: Full Text >](#)

U.S. Army Colonel George Wright slaughters 800 Palouse horses on September 8, 1858. On September 8, 1858, U.S. Army Colonel George Wright (1803-1865) orders his troops to slaughter 800 Native American horses (the herd of a Palouse chief) at Liberty Lake to deny their use by enemy tribes. Soldiers also destroy native lodges and storehouses of grain. Wright is engaged in a punitive military expedition against the Yakama, Spokane, Palouse,

and Coeur d'Alene tribes, which had defeated Lieutenant Colonel Edward Steptoe's force on May 17 and 18, 1858. Horses represent both the wealth and military power of the tribes. The slaughter along with the destruction of the food supply devastates the tribes. [File 5142: Full Text >](#)

U.S. Army Colonel George Wright hangs Yakama and Palouse prisoners at the Ned-Whauld River beginning on September 25, 1858. Beginning on September 25, 1858, Colonel George Wright (1803-1865), U.S. Army, hangs Yakama and Palouse prisoners he suspects of killing whites. Wright is engaged in a punitive military expedition against the Yakama, Palouse, Spokane, and Coeur d'Alene tribes after their defeat of a force under Lieutenant Colonel Edward Steptoe in May. Yakama warrior Qualchan (alternatively spelled Quaichan, Qualchew, Qualchen, Quilchin, or Quaichien) is hanged 15 minutes after he surrenders to Wright carrying a white flag. The following day, six Palouse warriors are hanged after surrendering. Ned-Whauld River, called by the tribes Sin-too-too-olley (river of small fish) Creek, is thereafter called Hangman's Creek. [File 5141: Full Text >](#)

p. 202 – Organic Act of 1848

Father Pandosy establishes the Immaculate Conception Mission on Manastash Creek in the Kittitas Valley in July 1848. In July 1848, Father Charles M. Pandosy (1824-1891) establishes the Immaculate Conception Mission on Manastash Creek in the Kittitas Valley. Pandosy is a Catholic Missionary Oblate of Mary Immaculate. He operates the one-room mission until September 1849. [File 7496: Full Text >](#)

p. 202 - Oregon Territory

Congress creates Territory of Oregon on August 14, 1848. On August 14, 1848, Congress establishes the Territorial Government of Oregon. The United States had enjoyed sovereignty over the region, which included present-day Washington, Oregon, and Idaho, since 1846. In 1843, local residents had declared their own "provisional government." [File 5245: Full Text >](#)

Oregon Territory, Establishment of European exploration of the Pacific Northwest from the late 1500s through the 1700s led to multiple and overlapping territorial claims by Spain, Russia, France, Britain, and last but not least, the new American republic. At issue was the vast "Oregon Country" extending along the Pacific Coast from the northern edge of Spanish California on the 42nd parallel to the southern edge of "Russian America" (now Alaska) at 54 degrees 40 minutes north. [File 5446: Full Text >](#)

p. 202 – Washington Territory

Washington Territory and Washington State, Founding of Soon after the creation of Oregon Territory in 1848, settlers north of the Columbia River began demanding a territory of their own. Congress acquiesced on February 8, 1853, with the creation of Washington Territory. Statehood followed in 1889. [File 5661: Full Text >](#)

U.S. President Millard Fillmore establishes Washington Territory on March 2, 1853. On March 2, 1853, U.S. President Millard Fillmore signs a bill creating the Territory of Washington out of the Territory of Oregon. The new territory's boundaries are: north, 49 degree North Latitude; south, approximately due east from the mouth of the Columbia River; east, the Rocky Mountains; west, the Pacific Ocean. The eastern part of the territory would later become part of the states of Idaho and Montana. [File 5244: Full Text >](#)

1853 Census: First census of Washington Territory counts a population (excluding Indians) of 3,965 in 1853. In late summer or fall of 1853, United States Marshall J. Anderson has the responsibility of taking the first census in Washington Territory. He counts a population of 3,965, of which there are 1,682 males eligible to vote. The census is conducted to establish legislative districts for the Territorial Legislature. It excludes Indians, who are far more numerous than settlers. [File 2551: Full Text >](#)

Governor Isaac Stevens selects Olympia as capital of Washington Territory on November 28, 1853. On November 28, 1853, Isaac Stevens (1818-1862), the first governor of Washington Territory, issues a proclamation that names Olympia as the capital of the new Territory. Olympia, founded in 1850, is located in Thurston County on the shores of Budd Inlet, the southernmost extension of Puget Sound. At the time, it is among the largest settlements in the Territory. Although it is subsequently surpassed in population and commercial prominence by other cities, Olympia retains its position as capital of the Territory and later of Washington state. [File 5054: Full Text >](#)

1859 Census: Territorial audit of King County finds 55 horses, 255 white persons, 1 church, etc. in 1859. On January 4, 1860, the Territorial Auditor submitted to the Washington Territorial Legislative Assembly a report (dated December 31, 1859) on the numbers of white persons, horses, hogs, acres of potatoes, and so on then existing in King County. This file contains the auditor's report and includes his complete list. [File 2683: Full Text >](#)

1860 Census: First census to count Washington Territory as discrete entity; population nearly 75 percent male; Native Americans counted for first time, but badly. The 8th federal census, taken in 1860, is the first to formally include Washington Territory (established in 1853), although the 1850 count had estimated the population north of the Columbia River by parsing the count for Oregon Territory, of which Washington was then a part. The subject matter of the 1860 census is more limited in scope than it will be in later counts, and some of the inquiries seem rather quaint 150 years later (2010). Washington Territory in 1860 sprawls over approximately 240,000 square miles (a situation that lasted four years until Idaho Territory was created in 1863) compared to 66,544 square miles today, but it is very sparsely populated. The distribution of people is different than it would become in later years, with Clarke (now Clark), Thurston, and Walla-Walla (now Walla Walla) being the most populous of the territory's 19 counties. Some data in the federal census varies slightly from that found in a territorial audit performed for the territorial legislature in the same year. The discrepancies are minor, however, and only the results of the federal census are included below. The spellings throughout this essay are those used in the census, and often differ from those used today. [File 9463: Full Text >](#)

Congressional Delegations from Washington State This is a complete historical list of the Washington territorial and state delegation to the United States Congress. Washington Territory was created on March 2, 1853, and the Territory became a state on November 11, 1889. [File 5463: Full Text >](#)

p. 204 – Washington Territorial Legislative Assembly

p. 204 – Olympia/Territorial capital

Governor Isaac Stevens selects Olympia as capital of Washington Territory on November 28, 1853. On November 28, 1853, Isaac Stevens (1818-1862), the first governor of Washington Territory, issues a proclamation that names Olympia as the capital of the new Territory. Olympia, founded in 1850, is located in Thurston County on the shores of Budd Inlet, the southernmost extension of Puget Sound. At the time, it is among the largest settlements in the Territory. Although it is subsequently surpassed in population and commercial prominence by other cities, Olympia retains its position as capital of the Territory and later of Washington state. [File 5054: Full Text >](#)

p. 204-5 – Territorial governors (Flanders, Saloman, Ferry, Newell, Squire, Semple, Moore)

Governors of Washington Territory and Washington State This is a complete list of the governors of Washington Territory and Washington state. The list includes birth and death dates and dates of office. Washington Territory was founded on March 2, 1853. Washington became a state on November 11, 1889. [File 5454: Full Text >](#)

Jewish governor of Washington Territory Edward Salomon takes office in the spring of 1870. In the spring of 1870, Edward S. Salomon (1836-1913) takes office as governor of Washington Territory. He serves from the spring of 1870 to the spring of 1872. As of 2003, he has been Washington's only Jewish governor. [File 5243: Full Text >](#)

p. 206 – George Gibbs

Fort Colvile (Hudson's Bay Company), 1825-1871 Fort Colvile, located near Kettle Falls, was established by the British Hudson's Bay Company (HBC) in 1825 when it moved its upper Columbia Basin fur-trading operations to this new location from Spokane House (established in 1810). The new post was christened Fort Colvile, after HBC official Andrew Colvile. Over the years the post grew, eventually comprising the store, warehouses, shops, stockades and a bastion, dwellings, and out buildings, as well as large land holdings for agriculture and livestock pasture. As a major way point for travelers in the Inland Northwest, Fort Colvile received many visitors, who are the main sources of information for what the post looked like. These accounts are indispensable, for hardly a trace of the place was left after a 1910 fire burned down what was left after 85 years. The post had gone into decline after the 1846 settlement of the American/Canadian border dispute, which left Fort Colvile in U.S. hands. Soon, the American military had established its own Fort Colville, with a slightly different spelling, leaving the old British-Canadian post to enter a long spiral of decay. The Hudson's Bay Company ended its occupation of Fort Colvile on June 8, 1871. The site was inundated by Lake Roosevelt in the early 1950s, following the construction of the Grand Coulee Dam. [File 9235: Full Text >](#)

p. 206 – Donation Land Claim Act

Donation Land Claim Act, spur to American settlement of Oregon Territory, takes effect on September 27, 1850. On September 27, 1850, the Donation Land Claim Act of 1850 takes effect. The act creates a powerful incentive for settlement of the Oregon Territory by offering 320 acres at no charge to qualifying adult U.S. citizens (640 acres to married couples) who occupy their claims for four consecutive years. Amendments in 1853 and 1854 continue the program, but cut the size of allowable claims by half. [File 9501: Full Text >](#)

p. 207 – Issac Stevens

Stevens, Isaac Ingalls (1818-1862) As Washington's first territorial governor, Isaac Stevens, oversaw the establishment of government in what would become Washington state. He also led the survey of a route to Puget Sound for a transcontinental railroad. Stevens's superintendency of Indian Affairs did not serve the interests of Native Americans and resulted in needless deaths and enduring controversy. [File 5314: Full Text >](#)

Former Governor Isaac Stevens offers his services to the U.S. Army in the Civil War on May 22, 1861. On May 22, 1861, Isaac I. Stevens (1818-1862), Washington Territory's former Governor and congressional delegate, offers his services to the U. S. Army to fight in the newly declared Civil War. [File 9895: Full Text >](#)

Former Washington Territory governor Isaac Stevens assumes command of 79th Regiment of New York Volunteers on August 10, 1861. On August 10, 1861, Isaac Stevens (1818-1862), former governor and

Congressional delegate of Washington Territory, accepts a commission as colonel in the U.S. Army and assumes command of the 79th Regiment of New York Volunteers near Washington, D.C. [File 9915: Full Text >](#)

Former territorial governor Isaac Stevens is promoted to Brigadier General in the Union Army on September 28, 1861. On September 28, 1861, Isaac Stevens (1818-1862), Washington Territory's first governor and two-term delegate to the U.S. Congress, is promoted to Brigadier General in the Union Army. [File 9917: Full Text >](#)

U.S. Army Brigadier General Isaac Stevens, first governor of Washington Territory, is killed at Battle of Chantilly on September 1, 1862. On September 1, 1862, U.S. Army Brigadier General Isaac Stevens (1818-1862), the first governor of Washington Territory, is killed in action at the Battle of Chantilly, Virginia, 25 miles west of Washington, D.C. Stevens is 44 years old at the time of his death. [File 9918: Full Text >](#)

p. 207 – Medicine Creek Treaty

Native American tribal leaders and Territorial Gov. Stevens sign treaty at Medicine Creek on December 26, 1854. On December 26, 1854, at a meeting at Medicine Creek in present-day Thurston County, 62 leaders of major Western Washington tribes, including the Nisqually and Puyallup, sign a treaty with Territorial Governor Isaac Stevens (1818-1862). The tribes cede most of their lands in exchange for \$32,500, designated reservations, and the permanent right of access to traditional hunting and fishing grounds. [File 5254: Full Text >](#)

Treaty of Medicine Creek, 1854 The Treaty of Medicine Creek was signed on December 26, 1854, at a meeting at Medicine Creek in present-day Thurston County. Sixty-two leaders of major Western Washington tribes, including the Nisqually and Puyallup, signed the treaty with Territorial Governor Isaac Stevens (1818-1862). The tribes ceded most of their lands in exchange for \$32,500, designated reservations, and the permanent right of access to traditional hunting and fishing grounds. Following is the complete text of the treaty. [File 5253: Full Text >](#)

p 207 – Point No Point Treaty

Treaty of Point No Point, 1855 The Treaty of Point No Point was signed on January 26, 1855, at Hahdskus, or Point No Point, on the northern tip of the Kitsap Peninsula. Governor of Washington Territory Isaac Stevens (1818-1862) convened the treaty council on January 25, with the S'Klallam, the Chimakum, and the Skokomish. Leaders argued against signing Governor Steven's terms, but by the second day were persuaded to do so. Under the treaty, tribes of the northern Kitsap Peninsula ceded ownership of land in exchanged for small reservation and hunting and fishing rights. This file contains the complete text of the Point No Point Treaty. [File 5637: Full Text >](#)

p. 207 - Neah Bay Treaty

Treaty of Neah Bay, 1855 The Treaty of Neah Bay was signed on on January 31, 1855 by Isaac Stevens (1818-1862), Governor of Washington Territory, and by leaders and delegates of the Makah tribe. Following is the complete text of the treaty. [File 2632: Full Text >](#)

Makah leaders and Territorial Gov. Stevens sign treaty at Neah Bay on January 31, 1855. On January 31, 1855, at Neah Bay near Cape Flattery at the tip of the Olympic Peninsula, 42 Makah leaders sign a treaty with Isaac Stevens (1818-1862), governor and Superintendent of Indian Affairs of Washington Territory. The leaders, representing four of the five traditional Makah villages, give up most of their ancestral lands, keeping only a small

reservation at Cape Flattery, in return for a promised \$30,000 in annuity payments and a guarantee of the right of hunting, fishing, sealing, and whaling. [File 5364: Full Text >](#)

Makah Whaling In 1999 and 2000, after a hiatus of seven decades, Makah Indian whalers again hunted gray whales from their ancestral lands around Cape Flattery on the Olympic Peninsula. The Makah, whose whaling tradition dates back thousands of years, are the only tribe in the United States with a treaty guaranteeing the right to hunt whales. Makahs had not whaled since the 1920s, when commercial whaling nearly wiped out whale populations, but the tribe announced it would resume whaling after the gray whale was removed from the Endangered Species List in 1994. The decision ignited worldwide controversy. Some animal rights activists bitterly denounced the Makah, but other groups, from advocates for indigenous rights to the United States government, supported the tribe's right to hunt. Following legal battles and physical confrontations with protestors, Makah whalers landed their first whale in more than 70 years on May 17, 1999. A 2000 hunt was not successful, and court decisions put further authorized hunts on hold (although five whalers killed a whale without permission in 2007) as the Makah, who continue to assert their treaty right to hunt whales, seek federal approval to continue their tradition. [File 5301: Full Text >](#)

HistoryLink Elementary: Makah Whaling The culture and lifestyle of the Makah Indians is based on the sea. Their homeland is on the Olympic Peninsula in northwestern Washington, along the shore of the Strait of Juan de Fuca and the coastline of the Pacific Ocean. They have hunted gray whales for thousands of years. The tribe used every part of the whale as food, to make all sorts of needed items, and to trade. When Makah leaders signed the Treaty of Neah Bay in 1855, they were promised that they could continue to fish and hunt for whales. But professional whalers hunted gray whales until they were almost extinct. The gray whale was placed on the Endangered Species list and the Makah were not allowed to hunt it. In 1999, Makah whalers conducted a traditional whale hunt and landed a whale. Many in the tribe had not tasted fresh whale blubber before. Since then, the whale hunts have been stopped until new studies on the environment can be completed. [File 10739: Full Text >](#)

p. 207 - Quinalt River Treaty

Quinalt Treaty, 1856 The Quinalt Treaty was signed by Isaac Stevens (1818-1862), Governor of Washington Territory, and by Quinalt Chief Taholah and other chiefs, subchiefs, and tribal delegates on the Quinalt River on July 1, 1855 and at Olympia, on January 25, 1856. Following is the complete text of the treaty. [File 2633: Full Text >](#)

p. 207 – Muckleteoh Treaty (Jan 1855)

p. 207 – Treaty of Olympia

Treaty of Olympia, 1856 The Treaty of Olympia was signed by representatives of the United States government and the Quinalt Indian tribe on July 1, 1855, and by the Hoh and Quileute Indian tribes on January 25, 1856, and ratified by Congress in 1859. This file contains the complete text of the treaty. [File 9791: Full Text >](#)

p. 207 – Chinook jargon

p. 208-9 – Walla Walla Council

Territorial Governor Isaac Stevens convenes the First Walla Walla Council with Native American tribes on May 29, 1855. On May 29, 1855, Washington Territorial Governor Isaac Stevens (1818-1862) convenes the First Walla Walla Council with Native American tribes of the Columbia River basin. Stevens' orders are to extinguish the tribes' title to lands in the territory in order to open it for settlement. Stevens offers the tribes reservations, cash, and especially, retaining their traditional hunting and fishing grounds. [File 5188: Full Text >](#)

Governor Isaac Stevens convenes Second Walla Walla Council on September 11, 1856. On September 11, 1856, Governor Isaac Stevens (1819-1862) convenes the Second Walla Walla Council with Native American tribes to end hostilities and to extinguish their title to their lands. The tribes do not agree and Stevens and his military escort fight their way to safety.

[File 5189: Full Text >](#)

p. 208 – Walla Walla Peace Treaties (Nez Perce)

Treaty with the Nez Perce, 1855 This file contains the complete text of the Treaty with the Nez Perces, which was signed on the council grounds in Walla Walla County, Washington Territory, on June 11, 1855. [File 8131: Full Text >](#)

p. 208 – Walla Walla Peace Treaties (Cayuse, Walla Walla, Umatilla)

Treaty with the Walla Walla, Cayuse, and Umatilla, 1855. The Treaty with the Walla Walla, Cayuse, and Umatilla was signed by signed by Isaac Stevens (1818-1862), Governor of Washington Territory, and by Pio-pio-mox-mox, chief of the Walla Wallas, Weyatenatemany, chief of the Cayuse, and Wenap-snoot, chief of the Umatilla, on June 9, 1855. This file contains the complete text of the treaty. [File 8129: Full Text >](#)

p. 208 – Walla Walla Peace Treaties (Yakama Nations)

Treaty with the Yakama, 1855. The Yakama Treaty was signed on June 9, 1855, by Isaac Stevens (1818-1862), Governor of Washington Territory, and by Chief Kamiakin (Kamaiakun) of the Lower Yakima, and other tribal leaders and delegates. (Note that in 1994 the Yakima Tribe changed its name back to its original form, the Yakama Tribe.) This file contains the complete text of the treaty. [File 8128: Full Text >](#)

p. 209 – Wenatchi Indians

Indians and non-Indians attend a historic powwow at Cashmere from August 20 to 22, 1931. A historic powwow held at Cashmere August 20 through 22, 1931, draws Indians and non-Indians from a wide area. The main organizers are J. Harold Anderson, a young Cashmere attorney who represented the Wenatchi Tribe, and Mark Balaban, one of the founders of the well-known Cashmere firm Aplets & Cotlets. Through John Harmelt (d. 1937), the last hereditary Wenatchi chief, Anderson has become increasingly aware of the unfair treatment of these Indians following Territorial Governor Isaac Stevens's Walla Walla Treaty of 1855, which deeded Wenatchi land, now part of the Wenatchee National Forest, to the Yakama Nation. Article X of the same treaty assures the Wenatchis of the

continuation of their fishing rights by promising a fishery, the Wenatchapam (Wenatshapam) Fishery Reservation, at the confluence of Icicle Creek and the Wenatchee River at present Leavenworth. As an attempt to call attention to this unfilled treaty obligation to the Wenatchis, as well as to boost the economy of Cashmere area, Anderson, Balaban, the Chamber of Commerce, and local Indian leaders organize a "Grand Powwow and Historical Pageant." [File 9147: Full Text >](#)

Wenatchee -- Thumbnail History The name Wenatchee applies to a river and its valley, a tribe (Wenatchi), and a town. The county seat of Chelan County, Wenatchee is a thriving and growing town at the confluence of the Wenatchee and Columbia rivers and the center of the nation's major apple-producing area. Ironically, the man dubbed "The Father of Wenatchee" (Ficken, 33) was a resident of Seattle, Judge Thomas Burke (1849-1925), with major interests in the Seattle, Lake Shore & Eastern Railroad, the Wenatchee Development Company, and the Great Northern Railway. The first business establishment was the Miller-Freer Trading Post of Samuel C. Miller (1829-1906) and Franklin and David Freer (d. 1888), who arrived in 1871. However, Don Carlos Corbett is considered the one who chose the name Wenatchee for the town. Acting for the Wenatchee Development Company, he platted a portion of the 1,400 acres along the Columbia that the company had purchased in 1888 and 1889. This site was soon to be superseded by a new site a mile away on the route of the Great Northern Railway. Although the new town was at the junction of rail and river transportation, its development was hampered by a dry climate and a lack of enough arable land to grow grain profitably. Irrigation, beginning on a large scale in 1904, provided the means by which the Wenatchee area could irrigate the narrow benches along the river and develop its apple empire. A year later, Rufus Woods (1878-1950) arrived in town. He would become the owner and publisher of the Wenatchee Daily World and a major instigator of Grand Coulee Dam. No other local leader would surpass him in vision for Wenatchee and the promotion of its interests. [File 8634: Full Text >](#)

p. 210 – Chief Sealth/Chief Seattle (Duwamish/Suquamish)

Chief Seattle (Seattle, Chief Noah [born si?al, 178?-1866]) Chief Seattle, or si?al in his native Lushootseed language, led the Duwamish and Suquamish tribes as the first Euro-American settlers arrived in the greater Seattle area in the 1850s. Baptized Noah by Catholic missionaries, Seattle was regarded as a "firm friend of the Whites," who named the region's future central city in his honor. He was a respected leader among Salish tribes, signing the Point Elliott (Mukilteo) Treaty of 1855, which relinquished tribal claims to most of the area, and opposing Native American attempts to dislodge settlers during the "Indian Wars" of 1855-1856. Chief Seattle retired to the Suquamish Reservation at Port Madison, and died there on June 7, 1866. This essay includes a sound recording of the correct pronunciation of Chief Seattle's name, provided by Skagit elder Vi Hilbert (1918-2008). [File 5071: Full Text >](#)

Chief Seattle -- his Lushootseed name and other important words pronounced in Lushootseed by Vi Hilbert

In this sound recording, renowned Skagit elder Vi Hilbert (1918-2008) correctly pronounces Chief Seattle's name and other common names in Lushootseed, the language of the several Coast Salish peoples. The recording was done on December 7, 2006, by Janet Yoder, a longtime student of Hilbert's and who has written on her life and work in preserving the Lushootseed language. The file also contains a transcription of the tape. [File 8156: Full Text >](#)

Chief Seattle's Speech In addition to his namesake city, Chief Seattle (178?-1866) is best remembered for a speech given, according to pioneer Dr. Henry Smith, on the occasion of an 1854 visit to Seattle of Isaac Stevens (1818-1862). Stevens was governor and Commissioner of Indian Affairs of Washington Territory. He visited in January and again in March 1854. Chief Seattle's speech went unnoted in the written record until October 29, 1887, when the *Seattle Sunday Star* published a text reconstructed from admittedly incomplete notes by Dr. Smith. [File 1427: Full Text >](#)

HistoryLink Elementary: Chief Seattle Chief Seattle's parents were from tribes on both sides of Elliott Bay and the Duwamish River. He lived during a time of change for his people and the Puget Sound region. He welcomed the Collins and Denny parties when they arrived as the first pioneer families in the Seattle area. Chief Seattle was considered a peacekeeper between the settlers and his people. He was respected so much that the new city was named in his honor. [File 10736: Full Text >](#)

HistoryLink Elementary: Princess Angeline, Daughter of Chief Seattle Kikisoblu, the daughter of Chief Seattle was a friend to early Seattle pioneers. One of the pioneer women, Catherine Maynard, thought Kikisoblu should have a name that would let everyone know that she was the daughter of a great chief -- so she renamed her "Princess Angeline." Angeline sold baskets and did laundry to earn her own living. She lived a very simple life but her new friends looked out for her. [File 10737: Full Text >](#)

p. 210, 220, 221 – Chief Joseph (Nez Perce)

Chief Joseph (1840-1904) Chief Joseph (1840-1904) was a leader of the Wallowa band of the Nez Perce Tribe, who became famous in 1877 for leading his people on an epic flight across the Rocky Mountains. He was born in 1840 and he was called Joseph by Reverend Henry H. Spalding (1803-1874), who had established a mission amongst the Nez Perce in 1836. Young Joseph and his father soon returned to their traditional ways in their Wallowa homeland in Oregon. When Joseph grew up and assumed the chieftanship, he was under increasing governmental pressure to abandon his Wallowa land and join the rest of the Nez Perce on their reservation near Lapwai, Idaho. Joseph refused, saying that he had promised his father he would never leave. In 1877, these disputes erupted into violence and Joseph's band, along with other Nez Perce bands, fled across the Bitterroot Mountains into Montana, with federal troops in pursuit. Joseph was by no means the military leader of the group, yet his standing in the tribe made him the camp chief and the group's political leader. It was Joseph who finally surrendered the decimated band to federal troops near the Canadian border in Montana. Joseph and the tribe were taken to a reservation in Indian Territory in present day Oklahoma, where they remained until 1885 when they were sent to the Colville Reservation in North Central Washington. Joseph made several visits to Washington, D.C., to plead for a return to the Wallowa country, but his pleas were in vain. Joseph died in 1904 in Nespelem, Washington, of what his doctor called "a broken heart." His tomb remains in Nespelem today. [File 8975: Full Text >](#)

Chief Joseph watches a University of Washington football game and gives a speech in Seattle on November 20, 1903. On November 20, 1903, Chief Joseph (1840-1904) and his nephew Red Thunder watch a University of Washington football game in Seattle. Later that evening Joseph speaks to a crowd of people at the Seattle Theatre, located downtown at the corner of 3rd Avenue and Cherry Street. [File 10286: Full Text >](#)

p. 210 – Chief Moses (Sinkiuse/Columbia)

Chief Moses (1829-1899) Chief Moses was the leader of the Columbia band of Indians, who gave his name to both Moses Lake and Moses Coulee. He was born in 1829, the son of a chief of this Central Washington tribe. His father sent him off at age 10 to Rev. Henry Spalding's Christian mission at Lapwai, Idaho, to learn Christianity and the white man's ways. Moses received his Christian name there, but was never baptized. He soon returned to his own people and as a young man came to be known as a brave warrior, a fierce opponent of white intrusion, and an influential leader. During the Indian wars and subsequent reservation negotiations, he emerged as one of the most influential tribal leaders in the entire Inland Northwest. Many white settlers distrusted Chief Moses -- he was accused of murder several times -- yet for decades he maintained a careful balance between friendliness and resistance, always stopping short of outright hostility. He went to Washington D.C. twice, where he signed two treaties and shook the hand of a U.S. president. However, his dream of a permanent reservation encompassing his

mid-Columbia River homeland was thwarted on several occasions. He and his tribe eventually moved on to the Colville Reservation, north of the Columbia. He was an influential leader on the reservation and helped the defeated Chief Joseph (1840-1904) and his Nez Perce band to settle there. He died at the age of 70, recognized -- grudgingly, in some cases -- as a powerful, stalwart diplomat for his people. [File 8870: Full Text >](#)

p. 210 and 213 -- Chief Peo-peomoxmox (Walla Walla)

Treaty with the Walla Walla, Cayuse, and Umatilla, 1855. The Treaty with the Walla Walla, Cayuse, and Umatilla was signed by signed by Isaac Stevens (1818-1862), Governor of Washington Territory, and by Pio-pio-mox-mox, chief of the Walla Wallas, Weyatenatemany, chief of the Cayuse, and Wenap-snoot, chief of the Umatilla, on June 9, 1855. This file contains the complete text of the treaty. [File 8129: Full Text >](#)

Oregon volunteers battle the Walla Wallas and other tribes beginning on December 7, 1855. On December 7, 1855, a four-day battle begins between Oregon volunteers and the Walla Wallas and other tribes. That year, many of the Native American tribes of the interior Pacific Northwest were restive. Some had been coerced into signing treaties that granted most of their ancestral lands to the United States, whose citizens were beginning to crowd into the area. The Yakamas, under the leadership of Kamiakin and others of his family, were in open defiance of the encroaching whites and battled with volunteer territorial militias. When their resistance was reduced, the territorial volunteers turned to other tribes that had been asserting themselves, including the Walla Wallas under their chief, Peo-Peo-Mox-Mox. Marching into their stronghold in the Walla Walla River valley, the First Oregon Mounted Volunteers defeated the Walla Wallas and their allies in a four day running battle. Before the fight, chief Peo-Peo-Mox-Mox had been taken hostage and, during the first day of the battle, he and other hostages were killed. The Walla Wallas never fully recovered from the campaign. The next year, federal troops took over the fighting and, following a series of battles during 1858, most Indian military resistance in the interior Pacific Northwest was broken. [File 8132: Full Text >](#)

Territorial Governor Isaac Stevens convenes the First Walla Walla Council with Native American tribes on May 29, 1855. On May 29, 1855, Washington Territorial Governor Isaac Stevens (1818-1862) convenes the First Walla Walla Council with Native American tribes of the Columbia River basin. Stevens' orders are to extinguish the tribes' title to lands in the territory in order to open it for settlement. Stevens offers the tribes reservations, cash, and especially, retaining their traditional hunting and fishing grounds. [File 5188: Full Text >](#)

Artist Gustavus Sohon documents the Walla Walla treaty council in May, 1855. In May 1855, Gustavus Sohon (1825-1903) documents important scenes at the Walla Walla treaty council conducted by Governor Isaac Stevens (1818-1862) and General Joel Palmer, the Superintendents of Indian Affairs for Washington Territory and Oregon Territory. Sohon also sketches portraits of key figures at the council, including members of the Cayuse, Nez Perce, Palus, Umatilla, Walla Walla, and Yakama tribes. Sohon arrived on the Columbia River in 1852 as a private in the U.S. Army, and during the following decade, accompanied four expeditions across Eastern Washington. A man of many talents, Sohon serves as a guide, an interpreter, an explorer, and a cartographer, but he is best known as a self-taught artist whose surviving pencil sketches and watercolors of important figures and landmarks comprise valuable eyewitness records of a crucial transitional period in Inland Northwest history. [File 8595: Full Text >](#)

p. 210 - Chief Spokane Garry (Spokane)

Chief Spokane Garry (ca. 1811-1892) Chief Spokane Garry was a chief of the Spokane Tribe whose long, and ultimately tragic life spanned the fur-trading, missionary, and white settlement eras of the region. His father, also a

Spokane chief, sent Garry off with fur traders at age 14 to be educated at the Red River Settlement's missionary school in Canada. Garry returned after five years, fluent in English and French, to become an influential leader and spokesman for his tribe. He opened a rough school to teach reading and writing and also taught his fellow tribesmen agricultural techniques. He participated in many peace councils, including those of 1855 and 1858, and was known as a steadfast advocate of peace and an equally steadfast advocate of a fair land settlement for his tribe. He never wavered on his insistence that the Spokane people should have the rights to their native lands along the Spokane River, a goal which proved unattainable. His own farm in what is now the Hillyard area of Spokane was stolen from him late in life and he and his sadly diminished band were forced to camp in Hangman Valley, where boys from the growing city of Spokane would throw rocks onto their tepees. A kindly landowner allowed Garry and his family to camp in Indian Canyon, where he lived out the rest of his life in poverty. He died there in 1892 and was buried in a pauper's grave. Decades later, a Spokane city park was named after him and a statue erected in his honor. [File 8713: Full Text >](#)

p. 211 – Chief Leschi (Nisqually)

[Native American tribal leaders and Territorial Gov. Stevens sign treaty at Medicine Creek on December 26, 1854.](#) On December 26, 1854, at a meeting at Medicine Creek in present-day Thurston County, 62 leaders of major Western Washington tribes, including the Nisqually and Puyallup, sign a treaty with Territorial Governor Isaac Stevens (1818-1862). The tribes cede most of their lands in exchange for \$32,500, designated reservations, and the permanent right of access to traditional hunting and fishing grounds. [File 5254: Full Text >](#)

[Nisqually Chief Leschi is hanged on February 19, 1858.](#) On February 19, 1858, Nisqually Chief Leschi (1808-1858) is hanged on a gallows at Fort Steilacoom, for the "murder" of the American soldier Colonel A. Benton Moses. Chief Leschi's attorneys argued firstly that Leschi had not actually been the one to kill Colonel Moses, and secondly that Colonel Moses was killed during warfare (in which there were casualties on both sides), requiring that his accused killer should not be tried in a civilian court. On March 4, 2004, the Washington State Senate formally recognized "the injustice which occurred in 1858 with the trial and execution of Chief Leschi" and honored Chief Leschi as "a courageous leader" and "a great and noble man" (Washington State Senate Resolution 8727). [File 5145: Full Text >](#)

[Fort Steilacoom \(1849-1868\)](#) Fort Steilacoom, located in south Puget Sound near Lake Steilacoom, was established by the United States Army in 1849. Protection of settlers in the area had become an issue. As well, the United States was anxious to plant the flag on land claimed by Britain. (Britain had ceded the territory south of the 49th parallel in 1846, but claimed this land as a commercial enterprise. Fort Steilacoom was established in what was then Oregon Territory. Congress would create Washington Territory in 1853.) In August 1849 the U.S. Army moved onto the Joseph Heath farm to establish the fort, leasing the land from the British Hudson's Bay Company. The fort served as a headquarters in the 1855-1856 Indian Wars, but there were no hostile actions here. A major event was the incarceration of Nisqually Chief Leschi (1808-1858) in the fort guardhouse. The post commander and other officers protested his trial and murder conviction, arguing that he was probably not guilty, as a state of war had existed. Fort Steilacoom was closed in 1868 and became the site of the Western State Hospital, a psychiatric facility. Today (2012) the Fort Steilacoom Museum is also located on the site. [File 10102: Full Text >](#)

[Native Americans rebury Chief Leschi on tribal land on July 4, 1895.](#) On July 4, 1895, the body of Nisqually Chief Leschi (1808-1858) is reburied on the Nisqually Reservation in Pierce County south of Tacoma. One thousand people, mostly Native Americans representing the Nisqually, Puyallup, Muckleshoot, Black River, Green River, and White River tribes attend the ceremony. [File 5480: Full Text >](#)

[Historical court clears Chief Leschi's name on December 10, 2004.](#) On December 10, 2004, a special state historical court clears Nisqually Chief Leschi (1808-1858) of murder charges. Chief Leschi was hanged in 1858 for

allegedly murdering Col. A. Benton Moses. At the time of his two trials, Leschi and his lawyers argued that he and Moses were legal combatants in a war (the Indian War of 1855-1856), and that whoever killed Moses could not be legally charged with murder. This is the exact opinion of the special historical court that exonerates the Nisqually chief's name in 2004. [File 7257: Full Text >](#)

p. 211 – Chief Lawyer (Nez Perce)

Artist Gustavus Sohon documents the Walla Walla treaty council in May, 1855. In May 1855, Gustavus Sohon (1825-1903) documents important scenes at the Walla Walla treaty council conducted by Governor Isaac Stevens (1818-1862) and General Joel Palmer, the Superintendents of Indian Affairs for Washington Territory and Oregon Territory. Sohon also sketches portraits of key figures at the council, including members of the Cayuse, Nez Perce, Palus, Umatilla, Walla Walla, and Yakama tribes. Sohon arrived on the Columbia River in 1852 as a private in the U.S. Army, and during the following decade, accompanied four expeditions across Eastern Washington. A man of many talents, Sohon serves as a guide, an interpreter, an explorer, and a cartographer, but he is best known as a self-taught artist whose surviving pencil sketches and watercolors of important figures and landmarks comprise valuable eyewitness records of a crucial transitional period in Inland Northwest history. [File 8595: Full Text >](#)

Territorial Governor Isaac Stevens convenes the First Walla Walla Council with Native American tribes on May 29, 1855. On May 29, 1855, Washington Territorial Governor Isaac Stevens (1818-1862) convenes the First Walla Walla Council with Native American tribes of the Columbia River basin. Stevens' orders are to extinguish the tribes' title to lands in the territory in order to open it for settlement. Stevens offers the tribes reservations, cash, and especially, retaining their traditional hunting and fishing grounds. [File 5188: Full Text >](#)

p. 211 – Chief Napoleon (Tulalip)

p. 211, 220 – Chief Looking Glass (Nisqually)

- **Territorial Governor Isaac Stevens convenes the First Walla Walla Council with Native American tribes on May 29, 1855.** On May 29, 1855, Washington Territorial Governor Isaac Stevens (1818-1862) convenes the First Walla Walla Council with Native American tribes of the Columbia River basin. Stevens' orders are to extinguish the tribes' title to lands in the territory in order to open it for settlement. Stevens offers the tribes reservations, cash, and especially, retaining their traditional hunting and fishing grounds. [File 5188: Full Text >](#)

p. 211 – Comcomly

Comcomly (1760s?-1830) Comcomly was a leading figure among the Chinook Indian bands who lived along the lower Columbia River during the period of contact between Native American tribes and Euro-American fur traders. Comcomly's career spanned the beginnings of the maritime fur trade on the Northwest Coast, the advent of guns and other manufactured goods, and the establishment of trade houses along the lower Columbia. An intelligent diplomat and shrewd businessman, he was credited by many contemporary observers with helping maintain peaceful relations between the Chinook people and European and American traders and explorers during the early 1800s. He died in 1830, one of the many victims of an intermittent fever epidemic that swept the region. [File 10042: Full Text >](#)

p. 212 – Battle of Toppenish Creek

Yakama tribesmen slay Indian Subagent Andrew J. Bolon near Toppenish Creek on September 23, 1855. On September 23, 1855, three Yakima tribesmen slay U.S. Indian Subagent Andrew Jackson Bolon in what will become Klickitat County. Bolon is investigating the killing of white miners by Yakima tribesmen. (Note: In 1994 the then-named Yakima Tribe changed the spelling of its name back to the original form, the Yakama Tribe.) The slain miners were among the prospectors for gold who had flooded through the Yakima Reservation on their way to goldfields on the Upper Columbia. The killing of Bolon will help trigger war between Native American tribes and white settlers and the U.S. government. [File 8118: Full Text >](#)

Yakama Indian War begins on October 5, 1855. On the afternoon of October 5, 1855, gunfire erupts between Yakama Chief Kamiakin's 300 warriors and Major Granville O. Haller's 84-man troop of soldiers. The two groups have been at a standoff across the ford at Toppenish Creek. Haller and his men are forced into retreat, but tensions continue to rise between the Indians and settlers from Southern Oregon up to the Puget Sound region. [File 5311: Full Text >](#)

p. 212 – Battle of Union Gap

Major Gabriel Rains and 700 soldiers and volunteers skirmish with Yakama warriors under Kamiakin at Union Gap on November 9, 1855. On November 9, 1855, U.S. Army Major Gabriel J. Rains (1803-1881), U.S. Army soldiers, and Oregon and Washington volunteers skirmish with warriors of the Yakama and other tribes under Chief Kamiakin (ca. 1800-1877) at Union Gap (sometimes called Twin Buttes) on the Yakima River. The Yakamas skillfully evacuate the women and children across the icy Columbia. Major Rains fails in his mission to suppress the Indians, who are resisting American incursions into their land. (Note: In 1994 the then-named Yakima Tribe changed the spelling of its name back to the original form, the Yakama Tribe.) [File 8124: Full Text >](#)

p. 212 – Decatur

Native Americans attack Seattle on January 26, 1856. On the morning of January 26, 1856, after months of raids and clashes with federal troops in southern King County and in Thurston County, Native Americans attack Seattle. Previously warned by friendly Indians, most settlers had barricaded themselves in a blockhouse. The attackers are driven off by artillery fire and by Marines from the U.S. Navy sloop-of-war *Decatur*, anchored in Elliott Bay. Two settlers and an unknown number of raiders perish in the all-day "Battle of Seattle." [File 5208: Full Text >](#)

p. 213 – death of Chief Peoemoxmox (Walla Walla)

Oregon volunteers battle the Walla Wallas and other tribes beginning on December 7, 1855. On December 7, 1855, a four-day battle begins between Oregon volunteers and the Walla Wallas and other tribes. That year, many of the Native American tribes of the interior Pacific Northwest were restive. Some had been coerced into signing treaties that granted most of their ancestral lands to the United States, whose citizens were beginning to crowd into the area. The Yakamas, under the leadership of Kamiakin and others of his family, were in open defiance of the encroaching whites and battled with volunteer territorial militias. When their resistance was reduced, the territorial volunteers turned to other tribes that had been asserting themselves, including the Walla Wallas under their chief, Peo-Peo-Mox-Mox. Marching into their stronghold in the Walla Walla River valley, the First Oregon Mounted Volunteers defeated the Walla Wallas and their allies in a four day running battle. Before the fight, chief Peo-Peo-

Mox-Mox had been taken hostage and, during the first day of the battle, he and other hostages were killed. The Walla Walla never fully recovered from the campaign. The next year, federal troops took over the fighting and, following a series of battles during 1858, most Indian military resistance in the interior Pacific Northwest was broken. [File 8132: Full Text >](#)

p. 213 – Attack on Cascades

Native Americans attack Americans at the Cascades of the Columbia on March 26, 1856. On March 26, 1856, warriors of the Yakama, Klickitat, and Cascades tribes attack Americans at the Cascades of the Columbia, killing 14 civilians and three soldiers. The settlers are besieged overnight until they are relieved by soldiers from The Dalles. The incident will be called the Cascades Massacre and is the costliest event in terms of white casualties during the Yakama Indian War of 1855-1856. [File 5190: Full Text >](#)

p. 213 – Chief Kamiakin (Yakama)

Chief Kamiakin (ca. 1800-1877) Kamiakin was an influential chief of the Yakama Tribe, a reluctant signer of the 1855 Walla Walla Treaty creating the Yakama Reservation, and one of the key war leaders during the Northwest's Indian Wars of 1855-1858. When he grew into adulthood, his imposing stature and natural authority made him a leader of his band, "every inch a king," according to one early white visitor (Scheuerman and Finley, p. 18). Kamiakin had vast herds of horses and cattle and dug the first irrigation ditch in the Yakima Valley. Kamiakin represented his tribe at the 1855 treaty council and eventually signed the treaty under great emotional stress. He later maintained he had been deceived. He immediately set out to create a confederation of tribes to resist white encroachment, earning comparisons to Tecumseh. He led warriors in a number of battles, yet despite some victories, American military force finally prevailed in 1858 during a battle in which Kamiakin was severely injured. He fled to Montana and lived as an outcast, eventually returning to camps on the Palouse River and Rock Lake in Eastern Washington. He refused to return to the Yakama Reservation, saying he did not recognize the treaty that created it. He died at Rock Lake in 1877. White grave robbers dug up his corpse the next year and stole his head. His skull was never found. Yet his name lives on in several schools throughout Washington. [File 10096: Full Text >](#)

Yakama Indian War begins on October 5, 1855. On the afternoon of October 5, 1855, gunfire erupts between Yakama Chief Kamiakin's 300 warriors and Major Granville O. Haller's 84-man troop of soldiers. The two groups have been at a standoff across the ford at Topenish Creek. Haller and his men are forced into retreat, but tensions continue to rise between the Indians and settlers from Southern Oregon up to the Puget Sound region. [File 5311: Full Text >](#)

Major Gabriel Rains and 700 soldiers and volunteers skirmish with Yakama warriors under Kamiakin at Union Gap on November 9, 1855. On November 9, 1855, U.S. Army Major Gabriel J. Rains (1803-1881), U.S. Army soldiers, and Oregon and Washington volunteers skirmish with warriors of the Yakama and other tribes under Chief Kamiakin (ca. 1800-1877) at Union Gap (sometimes called Twin Buttes) on the Yakima River. The Yakamas skillfully evacuate the women and children across the icy Columbia. Major Rains fails in his mission to suppress the Indians, who are resisting American incursions into their land. (Note: In 1994 the then-named Yakima Tribe changed the spelling of its name back to the original form, the Yakama Tribe.) [File 8124: Full Text >](#)

Oregon volunteers battle Yakamas and Klickitats along Satus Creek on April 10, 1856. On April 10, 1856, Yakamas and Klickitats under Kamiakin (ca. 1800-1877) ambush Oregon volunteers under Colonel Thomas Cornelius along Satus Creek near what will be the boundary between Klickitat and Yakima counties. The Indians break off the engagement and the volunteers continue their withdrawal from Yakama country. One soldier and four Indians die. [File 8152: Full Text >](#)

p. 214 – end of Yakama Wars/Fort Simcoe

United States establishes Fort Simcoe at the foot of the Simcoe Mountains on August 8, 1856. In August 1856, U.S. Army Colonel George Wright (1803-1865) establishes Fort Simcoe at the foot of the Simcoe Mountains about 30 miles west of what will become Toppenish, in the future Yakima County. Wright and military leaders hope that the post will keep peace by preventing white settlement of Indian lands. The Army will abandon the post in 1859 and it will become an Indian agency. [File 5292: Full Text >](#)

p. 214 – Spokane War/ Battle of Rosalia/ Colonel Edward Steptoe

Steptoe's Defeat: Battle of Tohotonimme (1858)The year 1858 was the seminal turning point in conflict between Native American tribes of the Pacific Northwest and the encroaching interests of the United States. Fur traders, missionaries, and gold seekers were followed by farmers and stock raisers, who continually enlarged their territories at the expense of the tribes. Tensions created by the situation caused the fearful white settlers to raise militias and, later, call on U.S. troops to protect them. In 1855, fighting erupted along Puget Sound, the Yakima Valley, and the Walla Walla Valley. Things had calmed down by 1858. So much so that Colonel Edward Steptoe (1816-1865) had no qualms about taking a small and lightly armed column of soldiers right through the heart of the Columbia Plateau Indian lands. His command was soundly thrashed at the Battle of Tohotonimme, a defeat that spurred a desire for retribution. Only a few months after the Steptoe debacle, Colonel George Wright (1803-1865) stormed through the Spokane Valley, a massive display of force that effectively removed the ability and the will of the Indians to resist. [File 8709: Full Text >](#)

p. 215 – Battle of Four Lakes/Colonel Wright/Wool/Clark

U.S. Army defeats Native Americans at Battle of Four Lakes on September 1, 1858. On September 1, 1858, some 500 U.S. Army troops under Colonel George Wright (1803-1865) defeat somewhat fewer than 500 Native Americans at Four Lakes near what will become Spokane. Wright is engaged in a punitive military expedition against the Yakama, Palouse, Spokane, and Coeur d'Alene tribes after their defeat of a force under Lieutenant Colonel Edward Steptoe (1816-1865) in May. Unlike Steptoe's soldiers, Wright's forces are armed with long range rifles firing newly developed minie balls. Warriors attack Wright's camp and he counterattacks. The battle lasts four hours and the Native Americans are driven off with heavy losses. [File 5143: Full Text >](#)

p. 215 – Battle of Spokane Plains (General James E. Woods, Brigadier General Newman S. Clarke, Colonel Wright, Major Garnett)

Battle of Spokane Plains occurs on September 5, 1858. On September 5, 1858, U.S. Army soldiers under Colonel George Wright (1803-1865) defeat Native Americans at the Battle of Spokane Plains. The engagement follows a skirmish four days before with members of the Spokane, Palouse, Yakama, and Coeur d'Alene tribes at Four Lakes. The soldiers and the warriors fight over a distance of 14 miles and one soldier is wounded. [File 5144: Full Text >](#)

Artist Gustavus Sohon sketches a panoramic view of the Battle of Spokane Plains on September 5, 1858. On September 5, 1858, artist Gustavus Sohon (1825-1903) sketches a panoramic view of the Battle of Spokane Plains between the U.S. Army troops of Colonel George Wright (1803-1865) and a force of Spokane, Coeur d'Alene, and Palus tribesmen. Sohon arrived on the Columbia River in 1852 as a private in the U.S. Army, and during the following decade, accompanied four expeditions across Eastern Washington. A man of many talents, Sohon serves

as a guide, an interpreter, an explorer, and a cartographer, but he is best known as a self-taught artist whose surviving pencil sketches and watercolors of important figures and landmarks comprise valuable eyewitness records of a crucial transitional period in Inland Northwest history. [File 8596: Full Text >](#)

p. 215 – Qualchen (Yakama)

U.S. Army Colonel George Wright hangs Yakama and Palouse prisoners at the Ned-Whauld River beginning on September 25, 1858. Beginning on September 25, 1858, Colonel George Wright (1803-1865), U.S. Army, hangs Yakama and Palouse prisoners he suspects of killing whites. Wright is engaged in a punitive military expedition against the Yakama, Palouse, Spokane, and Coeur d'Alene tribes after their defeat of a force under Lieutenant Colonel Edward Steptoe in May. Yakama warrior Qualchan (alternatively spelled Quaichan, Qualchew, Qualchen, Quilchin, or Quaichien) is hanged 15 minutes after he surrenders to Wright carrying a white flag. The following day, six Palouse warriors are hanged after surrendering. Ned-Whauld River, called by the tribes Sin-too-too-olley (river of small fish) Creek, is thereafter called Hangman's Creek. [File 5141: Full Text >](#)

p. 220 – Nez Perce retreat/impact on Washington Territory/Nez Perce Councils

Wanapum People After Smohalla In the 1850s, the Wanapum people were living peacefully at their village of P'na near the foot of Priest Rapids, on the Columbia River, where they practiced their Washani religion under the guidance of the prophet Smohalla (1815?-1895). They were painfully aware of what was going on all around them but managed to keep their distance and were little noticed. Isaac Stevens (1818-1862), the newly appointed governor of Washington Territory, was apparently not aware of their existence as a separate group. Being lumped together with other tribes of the mid-Columbia they, like the Chief Moses Band of Columbians (Sinkiuse), were expected to move onto the Yakama Reservation following the treaty of 1855. But, also like the Columbians, none of their leaders signed the Yakama Treaty. Unlike the Columbians, however, the Wanapum were not numerous and lived in a relatively small and isolated geographical area, although they continued to travel to far-flung subsistence sites. Whereas the Columbians were considered an impediment to white settlement in the central Columbia Basin country, the Wanapum were considered to be harmless by the few whites that settle in the Priest Rapids vicinity. The most obvious consequence of these differing perceptions was that the Columbians lost their ancestral lands and were eventually relocated on the Colville Reservation, while the Wanapum continued to dwell near their ancient village site at P'na. [File 9524: Full Text >](#)

p. 220 – General Oliver Howard

U.S. Army Colonel George Wright hangs Yakama and Palouse prisoners at the Ned-Whauld River beginning on September 25, 1858. Beginning on September 25, 1858, Colonel George Wright (1803-1865), U.S. Army, hangs Yakama and Palouse prisoners he suspects of killing whites. Wright is engaged in a punitive military expedition against the Yakama, Palouse, Spokane, and Coeur d'Alene tribes after their defeat of a force under Lieutenant Colonel Edward Steptoe in May. Yakama warrior Qualchan (alternatively spelled Quaichan, Qualchew, Qualchen, Quilchin, or Quaichien) is hanged 15 minutes after he surrenders to Wright carrying a white flag. The following day, six Palouse warriors are hanged after surrendering. Ned-Whauld River, called by the tribes Sin-too-too-olley (river of small fish) Creek, is thereafter called Hangman's Creek. [File 5141: Full Text >](#)

Nisqually Chief Quiemuth is murdered in Olympia on November 19, 1856. In the early-morning hours of November 19, 1856, Nisqually Chief Quiemuth (d. 1856), a half-brother of Chief Leschi (1808-1858), is murdered in Olympia. Both Leschi and Quiemuth had fought white settlers and soldiers in the Indian Wars of 1855 and 1856, but Quiemuth had tired of war, and shortly after Leschi's capture, had surrendered into the custody of Territorial Governor Isaac Stevens (1818-1862). Later the same night, as he is resting in Stevens's home while awaiting transfer to Fort Steilacoom, he is shot and stabbed to death. The assailant will never be positively identified and no one will ever be convicted of the crime. [File 10007: Full Text >](#)

p. 220 - Chief White Bird (Nez Perce)

p. 220 – Chief Toohoolhoolzote (Nez Perce)

p. 220 – defeat of Nez Perce at Bear Paw Mountain

Chief Joseph (1840-1904) Chief Joseph (1840-1904) was a leader of the Wallowa band of the Nez Perce Tribe, who became famous in 1877 for leading his people on an epic flight across the Rocky Mountains. He was born in 1840 and he was called Joseph by Reverend Henry H. Spalding (1803-1874), who had established a mission amongst the Nez Perce in 1836. Young Joseph and his father soon returned to their traditional ways in their Wallowa homeland in Oregon. When Joseph grew up and assumed the chieftanship, he was under increasing governmental pressure to abandon his Wallowa land and join the rest of the Nez Perce on their reservation near Lapwai, Idaho. Joseph refused, saying that he had promised his father he would never leave. In 1877, these disputes erupted into violence and Joseph's band, along with other Nez Perce bands, fled across the Bitterroot Mountains into Montana, with federal troops in pursuit. Joseph was by no means the military leader of the group, yet his standing in the tribe made him the camp chief and the group's political leader. It was Joseph who finally surrendered the decimated band to federal troops near the Canadian border in Montana. Joseph and the tribe were taken to a reservation in Indian Territory in present day Oklahoma, where they remained until 1885 when they were sent to the Colville Reservation in North Central Washington. Joseph made several visits to Washington, D.C., to plead for a return to the Wallowa country, but his pleas were in vain. Joseph died in 1904 in Nespelem, Washington, of what his doctor called "a broken heart." His tomb remains in Nespelem today. [File 8975: Full Text >](#)

CHAPTER 8: THE STATEHOOD ERA, 1859-1889

p. 225 - President Harrison/authorization of Washington state

Washington is admitted as the 42nd state to the United States of America on November 11, 1889. On November 11, 1889, Washington becomes the 42nd state of the United States of America. [File 5210: Full Text >](#)

p. 227 – Donation Land Claim Act

Donation Land Claim Act, spur to American settlement of Oregon Territory, takes effect on September 27, 1850. On September 27, 1850, the Donation Land Claim Act of 1850 takes effect. The act creates a powerful incentive for settlement of the Oregon Territory by offering 320 acres at no charge to qualifying adult U.S. citizens (640 acres to married couples) who occupy their claims for four consecutive years. Amendments in 1853 and 1854 continue the program, but cut the size of allowable claims by half. [File 9501: Full Text >](#)

p. 227 – Homestead Act

p. 227 – **Ewing Young**

p. 228 – **American Indian Territorial Losses**

p. 229 – **Reservations – loss of homeland**

p. 230 – **Oregon Trail**

A Story of Pioneering by Nicholas V. Sheffer (1825-1910), Part 1: Oregon Trail In 1909, Nicholas Sheffer (1825-1910) was Whatcom County's oldest pioneer. He prepared his reminiscences for *The Lynden Tribune*, which ran them in three parts in August of that year as **A Story of Pioneering: Being a Personal Narrative of Early Days in Northwest Washington**, told to the Tribune by N. V. Sheffer, of 1854. HistoryLink.org was made aware of this account by Whatcom County family historian Susan Nahas who connected Sheffer's information with the HistoryLink.org story of Julia Benson Intermela (1855-1907), the half-Duwamish daughter of Seattle pioneer Henry Yesler (1810-1892). In Part 1 Sheffer treks from Indiana to California to Puget Sound. [File 7975: Full Text >](#)

p. 232 - African American settlers in Washington state

Bush, George W. (1790?-1863) George W. Bush (1790?-1863) was a key leader of the first group of American citizens to settle north of the Columbia River in what is now Washington. Bush was a successful farmer in Missouri, but as a free African American in a slave state, he faced increasing discrimination and decided to move west. In 1844, Bush and his good friend Michael T. Simmons (1814-1867), a white Irish American, led their families and three others over the Oregon Trail. When they found that racial exclusion laws had preceded them and barred Bush from settling south of the Columbia River, they settled on Puget Sound, becoming the first Americans to do so. Bush established a successful farm near present day Olympia on land that became known as Bush Prairie. He and his family were noted for their generosity to new arrivals and for their friendship with the Nisqually Indians who lived nearby. Bush continued modernizing and improving his farm until his death in 1863. Named George Washington Bush in honor of the nation's first president, he has no known connection to the family of the two later presidents who share with him the name George Bush. [File 5645: Full Text >](#)

George W. Bush settles with his family at Bush Prairie near Tumwater in November 1845. In November 1845, George W. and Isabella James Bush and their five sons settle near Tumwater on a fertile plain that comes to be known as Bush Prairie. They and their party, which includes their good friend Michael T. Simmons (1814-1867) are the first Americans to settle north of the Columbia River in what is now Washington. The Simmons party makes the historically significant decision to settle north of the Columbia primarily because the discriminatory laws of the provisional government of Oregon Territory prohibit George Bush, an African American who is a key leader of the group, from settling south of the river. [File 5646: Full Text >](#)

Bush, William Owen (1832-1907) William Owen Bush was the eldest son of George Washington Bush (1790?-1863), of Irish and African American descent, and Isabella James Bush (1809?-1866), a German American. In 1844 he accompanied his parents and four younger brothers on an arduous wagon trek west with several families of white settlers. Their original goal was the Willamette Valley in Oregon Territory, but the provisional government there had recently passed a law banning black residency. Most of the party moved north, eventually settling around present-day Tumwater in Thurston County. The Bushes were an exceptional family, close-knit and known and respected for their thrift, industriousness, and above all, generosity. Owen (the name most commonly used for William Owen Bush in historical accounts) married a widow, Mandana Kimsey (1826-1899). They established a farm of their own at Grand Mound Prairie, about 12 miles south of the family homestead. When George Bush died in 1863, Owen, as the oldest son, took over the original farm, which he operated together with his brothers until his

death in 1907. He became an accomplished agronomist, coaxing high yields of exceptional grains from his land and winning national recognition at several expositions. He also found time to serve from 1889 to 1891 in the first legislature convened in the new State of Washington, where he played a significant role in the establishment of an agricultural college in Eastern Washington, the precursor to Washington State University. [File 10435: Full Text >](#)

Lopes, Manuel (1812-?) Manuel Lopes arrived in Seattle in 1852, and operated a barbershop equipped with the first barber chair to be brought around Cape Horn. He was Seattle's first black resident, businessman, and property owner, and Seattle's only snare drummer of the day. [File 394: Full Text >](#)

Manuel Lopes (1812-?), Seattle's first black citizen, arrives in 1852. Manuel Lopes (1812-?), Seattle's first black citizen, arrives in 1852. Lopes is a barber and his barbershop is the village's first black-owned business. He plays the snare drum, and is known for his generosity to his customers -- loggers, millhands, sailors, and miners. [File 2750: Full Text >](#)

Pioneer William Grose, an African American, arrives in Seattle in 1861. In 1861, William Grose (1835-1898), African American pioneer, arrives in Seattle and becomes a successful businessman. [File 308: Full Text >](#)

Black property owner William Hedges arrives in Seattle in 1864. In about 1864, William Hedges (d. 1871) arrives Seattle. He later becomes the African American who owns the most property during the territorial years. [File 232: Full Text >](#)

African American pioneer Matthias Monet opens a restaurant in Seattle in 1864. In 1864, Mathias Monet, an African American pioneer and native of Oregon, arrives in Seattle and opens Monet's Seattle Restaurant and Coffee Saloon opposite the Yesler, Denny and Company's Store. [File 235: Full Text >](#)

George and Mary Jane Washington found the town of Centerville (now Centralia) on January 8, 1875. On January 8, 1875, George Washington (1817-1905) and his wife Mary Jane file the plat that establishes the town of Centerville, soon to be renamed Centralia, in Lewis County in Southwest Washington. George Washington, a pioneer from Virginia, is the son of an African American slave and a woman of English descent. For the next 30 years, he is a leading citizen, promoter, and benefactor of the town he founds. [File 5276: Full Text >](#)

African American Thomas Freeman opens Pioneer Variety Store in Seattle in 1876. In 1876, African American Thomas P. Freeman opens the Pioneer Variety Store at the corner of Yesler Way and 2nd Avenue. He sells crockery, glassware, hardware, and new and used goods. He is a shoemaker by trade, having arrived in Seattle with his family in 1872. [File 2759: Full Text >](#)

African American Alfred Freeman opens boot and shoe shop in Seattle 1879. In 1879, African American Al Freeman opens a boot and shoe store on 1st Avenue. His advertisement states, "Boots and shoes of all kind made to measure at reasonable prices. Repairing neatly, cheaply and promptly done." Al Freeman is the son of Thomas P. (T.P.) Freeman who is the proprietor of the nearby Pioneer Variety Store. [File 2760: Full Text >](#)

African American pioneers John and Mary Conna settle in Federal Way area in 1883. In 1883, African American pioneers John Conna (1836-1921) and Mary Conna (1840-1907) arrive in the Federal Way area and settle on their 157 acre homestead. John Conna becomes the first black political appointee in the history of Washington Territory. [File 262: Full Text >](#)

African Americans Charles Harvey and Eva Ellis Harvey arrive in Seattle in 1886. In 1886, Charles H. and Eva Ellis Harvey come to Seattle. He becomes an early black contractor and employer. After living in Belltown for a brief time, they moved to a house on 2nd Avenue at the present (late 1990s) site of the Seattle Art Museum. [File 241: Full Text >](#)

Black publisher Horace Cayton arrives in Seattle in 1886. In 1886, Horace Cayton (1859-1940) comes to Seattle from Mississippi and by 1894 is publishing the *Seattle Republican* newspaper. [File 242: Full Text >](#)

Roslyn coalminers strike, precipitating the importation of black miners, on August 17, 1888. On August 17, 1888, Roslyn miners strike for an eight-hour day, and the Northern Pacific Coal Company brings in trainloads of black miners as strikebreakers. To protect the strikebreakers and to intimidate miners, the company hires 40 armed guards. This precipitates a legal and constitutional crisis, as Territorial Governor Eugene Semple (1840-1908) fears that this armed body constitutes a virtual private militia. He calls it "an outrage" and orders the guards dispersed or arrested. The strike will be settled, and the guards disbanded. Yet many of the black miners and their families will remain in Roslyn for decades. [File 9240: Full Text >](#)

African American entrepreneur Robert A. Clark arrives in Seattle in 1889. In 1889, Robert A. Clark, an African American entrepreneur, arrives in Seattle. Clark operates a drayage and delivery service out of his office at 2nd Avenue and Madison Street. [File 258: Full Text >](#)

African American John T. Gayton arrives in Seattle in 1889. In 1889, John T. Gayton (1868-1954) arrives in Seattle as a coachman for a Mississippi family. A founder of one of Seattle's leading African American families, he works as librarian for the Federal Court for 20 years. [File 259: Full Text >](#)

p. 233 - Development of Towns – see Cities + Towns for cyberpedias of most cities and towns (<http://www.historylink.org/index.cfm?DisplayPage=results.cfm&keyword=Cities & Towns&searchfield=topics>)

Jeremiah and Kate Borst file the first plat for Fall City on July 27, 1887. On July 27, 1887, Jeremiah Borst (1830-1890) and his wife Kate (1855-1938) file the first plat for Fall City, located along the Snoqualmie River, a mile downstream from Snoqualmie Falls. [File 10357: Full Text >](#)

p. 233 – Importance of schools in early towns

Seattle's first public school house opens on August 15, 1870. On August 15, 1870, Seattle's first public school house opens. It is located in the "northern portion of town" (now downtown) on 3rd Avenue between Madison and Spring streets in a two-story, two-room school house. The teacher is Elizabeth "Lizzie" Ordway (b. 1828), one of the original "Mercer Girls" who arrived in Seattle from Lowell, Massachusetts, in 1864. [File 1509: Full Text >](#)

Mercer Girls The first Mercer Girls were 11 young women that Asa Shinn Mercer (1839-1917) brought from Lowell, Massachusetts to Washington Territory on May 16, 1864. The women were to work as teachers and served to increase the number of marriageable women in a Territory populated chiefly by young bachelors. Asa Mercer brought a second group of 34 "Mercer Girls" to Seattle on May 28, 1866. [File 1125: Full Text >](#)

p. 234 – George Bush

George W. Bush settles with his family at Bush Prairie near Tumwater in November 1845. In November 1845, George W. and Isabella James Bush and their five sons settle near Tumwater on a fertile plain that comes to be known as Bush Prairie. They and their party, which includes their good friend Michael T. Simmons (1814-1867) are the first Americans to settle north of the Columbia River in what is now Washington. The Simmons party makes the historically significant decision to settle north of the Columbia primarily because the discriminatory laws of the

provisional government of Oregon Territory prohibit George Bush, an African American who is a key leader of the group, from settling south of the river. [File 5646: Full Text >](#)

Bush, George W. (1790?-1863) George W. Bush (1790?-1863) was a key leader of the first group of American citizens to settle north of the Columbia River in what is now Washington. Bush was a successful farmer in Missouri, but as a free African American in a slave state, he faced increasing discrimination and decided to move west. In 1844, Bush and his good friend Michael T. Simmons (1814-1867), a white Irish American, led their families and three others over the Oregon Trail. When they found that racial exclusion laws had preceded them and barred Bush from settling south of the Columbia River, they settled on Puget Sound, becoming the first Americans to do so. Bush established a successful farm near present day Olympia on land that became known as Bush Prairie. He and his family were noted for their generosity to new arrivals and for their friendship with the Nisqually Indians who lived nearby. Bush continued modernizing and improving his farm until his death in 1863. Named George Washington Bush in honor of the nation's first president, he has no known connection to the family of the two later presidents who share with him the name George Bush. [File 5645: Full Text >](#)

p.234 - Arthur Denny

Denny, Arthur Armstrong (1822-1899) Arthur A. Denny is considered the leader of the party of immigrants who first landed at Alki (West Seattle) in 1851 and then founded the city of Seattle in 1852. On February 15, 1852, after a period at Alki, Arthur Denny and others staked their Donation Land claims across Elliott Bay on what is today the waterfront of downtown Seattle. Denny served as a delegate to the Monticello convention which separated Washington from Oregon, as King County commissioner and Seattle postmaster, and as a delegate to the Territorial Legislature. This biography includes a list of the Denny Party with birth and death dates for each member. [File 921: Full Text >](#)

Denny party lands at Alki Point near future Seattle on November 13, 1851. On November 13, 1851, the Denny Party lands at Alki Point, not far from the site of the future Seattle. [File 5392: Full Text >](#)

First contingent of Denny party relocates to site of Seattle on April 3, 1852. On April 3, 1852, the first contingent of the Denny party relocates from Alki Point to the eastern shore of Elliott Bay, the site of future downtown Seattle. Those who make the move on April 3 are: William Bell (1817-1887), Sarah Ann (Peter) Bell (1819-1856), the four Bell children, Carson Boren's wife Mary (Kays) Boren (1831-1906), the Boren infant Gertrude, Louisa Boren (b. 1827), and recent arrival Dr. David Maynard (1808-1873). The Arthur Denny family, ill with "ague" (malarial fever), remains on Alki Point for the time being. [File 1956: Full Text >](#)

Arthur Denny proposes white-woman suffrage amendment in the Territorial Legislature's first session on February 28, 1854. In 1854, Arthur Denny (1822-1899), one of the founders of Seattle, proposes an amendment at the first session of the territorial legislature "to allow all white females over the age of 18 years to vote." It is defeated by a single vote. Lawmakers make a small concession, granting every taxpaying inhabitant over 21 years of age the right to vote in school elections. [File 5211: Full Text >](#)

Congressional Delegations from Washington State This is a complete historical list of the Washington territorial and state delegation to the United States Congress. Washington Territory was created on March 2, 1853, and the Territory became a state on November 11, 1889. [File 5463: Full Text >](#)

p. 234 – Isaac Ebey

Ebey surveys Puget Sound in the spring or summer of 1850. In the spring or summer of 1850, Colonel Isaac Ebey (1818-1857) conducts a reconnaissance of Puget Sound, including Elliott Bay, the Duwamish River, and Lake Washington. His glowing description inspires several early settlers to make their homes in the Puget Sound region. [File 1748: Full Text >](#)

Isaac Ebey is the first permanent U.S. settler on Whidbey Island on October 15, 1850. On October 15, 1850, Col. Isaac N. Ebey (1818-1857) files a claim on Whidbey Island under the Donation Land Law, less than a month after its passage. [File 5300: Full Text >](#)

North Coast Indians, likely members of the Kake tribe of Tlingits, behead Isaac Ebey on August 11, 1857. On August 11, 1857, a group of North Coast Indians -- likely members of the Kake tribe of Tlingits who were led by a woman warrior -- behead Col. Isaac N. Ebey (1818-1857) at his home, "The Cabins," near Ebey's Landing. These Indians were likely retaliating for the killing of 27 tribal members, including a chief, by the U.S. warship *Massachusetts* the previous year. It is an oral tradition of the Kake tribe of Tlingits that the raid was led by a female relative of a chief slain in the *Massachusetts* incident. The oral tradition further specifies that the female leader of the raid was a member of the Tsaagweidi clan. [File 5302: Full Text >](#)

p. 234 – Peter Kirk

Kirkland -- Thumbnail History The city of Kirkland, located on the northeastern shore of Lake Washington east of Seattle, is named for Peter Kirk (1840-1916). Kirk was a British steel industrialist who originally envisioned Kirkland as a bustling steel town. Kirk's plans didn't materialize. Nevertheless, Kirkland has become by the twenty-first century a thriving suburban community of almost 50,000 people. [File 208: Full Text >](#)

Kirkland incorporates on October 12, 1905. On October 12, 1905, Kirkland, located on the east side of Lake Washington in King County, incorporates with a population of 400. The community was settled in the 1860s, and was platted in the 1890s after the arrival of Peter Kirk (1840-1916). [File 7508: Full Text >](#)

p. 234 – Lizzie Ordway

Mercer Girls The first Mercer Girls were 11 young women that Asa Shinn Mercer (1839-1917) brought from Lowell, Massachusetts to Washington Territory on May 16, 1864. The women were to work as teachers and served to increase the number of marriageable women in a Territory populated chiefly by young bachelors. Asa Mercer brought a second group of 34 "Mercer Girls" to Seattle on May 28, 1866. [File 1125: Full Text >](#)

Mercer Girls reach Seattle on May 16, 1864. On May 16, 1864, the first Mercer Girls from the East Coast reach Seattle. Seattle resident Asa Mercer (1839-1917) has recruited the group to provide teachers for the young community and in order to alleviate the problem of lack of women in the Puget Sound area. [File 166: Full Text >](#)

Seattle's first public school house opens on August 15, 1870. On August 15, 1870, Seattle's first public school house opens. It is located in the "northern portion of town" (now downtown) on 3rd Avenue between Madison and Spring streets in a two-story, two-room school house. The teacher is Elizabeth "Lizzie" Ordway (b. 1828), one of the original "Mercer Girls" who arrived in Seattle from Lowell, Massachusetts, in 1864. [File 1509: Full Text >](#)

p. 234 – James Longmire

Pioneer David Longmire buys homestead in Wenas Valley, Yakima County, on March 10, 1871. On March 10, 1871, David Longmire (1844-1925), who as a child in 1853 was a member of the first wagon train of settlers to enter the Yakima Valley, purchases a homestead in the Wenas Valley from Augustin Cleman, the non-Indian to have settled there. Longmire will acquire adjacent lands in 1875 and 1878, establishing a large holding upon which he and all his children eventually will reside. Part of Longmire's homestead once belonged to Owhi (d. 1858), a chief of the Yakamas who had sold the 1853 party potatoes grown in his garden along Wenas Creek. Longmire will live in the valley for more than 50 years, becoming one of the region's leading citizens, a prominent farmer and stockman, and the successful plaintiff in a landmark legal dispute over water rights.

[File 10711: Full Text >](#)

First emigrant wagon train crosses Naches Pass through the Cascade Mountains in the fall of 1853. In September or October, 1853, the first wagon train succeeds in crossing rugged Naches Pass through the Cascade Mountains north of Mount Rainier, near where the borders of present-day Yakima, Kittitas, Pierce, and King Counties meet. The train of more than 30 wagons includes James and Virinda Longmire and their children, who have traveled with several other families from their home in Indiana to settle in Western Washington. [File 5053: Full Text >](#)

Peter Judson files Donation Land Claim to 321 acres in Tacoma in the fall of 1853. In the fall of 1853, Peter Judson files a Donation Land Claim to 321 acres on Commencement Bay, just north of the settlement around Nicolas Delin's sawmill. Judson will abandon the claim in 1855 when Native Americans attack settlers in the region. [File 5016: Full Text >](#)

p. 234 – Ezra Meeker

Meeker, Ezra (1830-1928) Ezra Meeker (1830-1928) was a Washington pioneer, successful hops farmer, merchant, and an influential advocate for preserving the Oregon Trail. With his wife Eliza Jane Sumner Meeker (1834-1909) he founded the town of Puyallup on the land surrounding their small cabin. Meeker represented Washington Territory and later the state of Washington in several major expositions in America and abroad. From 1906 until his death in 1928 Ezra Meeker devoted the majority of his time and energy to ensuring that the old emigrant trail used by more than half a million pioneers from 1841 to 1869 was marked and preserved, and that the memory of those pioneers was venerated. Ezra Meeker's steady insistence that the emigrant route deserved preservation and persistent publicizing of this cause ensured that the historical phenomena and literal pathway now known as the Oregon Trail were not forgotten. [File 7737: Full Text >](#)

Ezra Meeker plants hops in the Puyallup valley in March 1865. In March 1865, pioneer Ezra Meeker (1830-1928) plants hop vine cuttings on his farm in the Puyallup valley. The plants flourish and Meeker continues to expand his plantings over the years. By the early 1880s Meeker is a wealthy hop merchant with a branch in London selling hops on the world market.

[File 7742: Full Text >](#)

Ezra Meeker departs his Puyallup home to retrace the Oregon Trail on January 29, 1906. On January 29, 1906, Washington pioneer hop farmer Ezra Meeker (1830-1928) departs his grand home in Puyallup on a round trip expedition retracing the old emigrant trail to Oregon. Meeker's wagon is an old-style prairie schooner of the type used by thousands of the western pioneers who made up the great overland migration to the Oregon Country/Oregon Territory between 1841 and 1870. The goal of Meeker's journey is to publicize the historical importance of the Oregon Trail and to seek federal funding for its preservation. [File 7746: Full Text >](#)

p. 234 – Ben Snipes

Ben Snipes builds a log cabin near Sunnyside in 1859. In 1859, cattleman Ben Snipes (1835-1906) constructs a small cabin in the Yakima Valley. The structure is the first cabin in the region to be built by a white person.

[File 5109: Full Text >](#)

Ben Snipes drives cattle through the Willamette Valley to the Fraser River gold fields in 1859. In 1859, cowboy Ben Snipes (1835-1906) drives his first herd of cattle north from the Columbia River through Washington Territory to the gold mining camps along the Fraser River in British Columbia. Snipes drives his herd through present-day Klickitat, Yakima, Kittitas, Douglas and/or Chelan, and Okanogan counties before crossing into Canada. At the Fraser River hungry gold miners pay as much as a hundred times the herd's original price.

[File 5110: Full Text >](#)

Five mounted robbers hit the Benjamin E. Snipes and Company Bank in Roslyn on September 24, 1892. On September 24, 1892, five robbers hit the Benjamin E. Snipes and Company Bank in Roslyn when the payroll for the Roslyn mine is delivered -- upwards of \$100,000. Three of them demand money from the cashier and when he hesitates, pistol-whip him. They run out of the bank and exchange gunshots with some townspeople. Then they meet up with two accomplices, jump on horses and gallop into the mountains. They get away, but with far less cash than they counted on -- the payroll had not yet arrived. [File 9241: Full Text >](#)

p. 234 – Michael T. Simmons

Michael T. Simmons settles at Tumwater in October 1845. In late October 1845, Michael T. Simmons (1814-1867) of Kentucky, Iowa, and Missouri settles at Tumwater near the Falls of the Deschutes River. Tum-wa-ta is a Chinook Jargon word for strong water or waterfall. Simmons calls the location New Market to signify that there is an alternative to the Hudson's Bay Company post at Nisqually. It is the first American settlement in what would become the state of Washington. [File 5089: Full Text >](#)

p. 234, 237 – Henry Yesler

Yesler, Henry L. (1810-1892) Henry L. Yesler secured Seattle's future success by establishing Puget Sound's first steam-powered sawmill in the young village in 1852. He maintained good relations with local Native Americans, and sired at least one child by a Indian woman before his wife Sarah arrived from Ohio in 1858. Yesler served as King County's first auditor in 1853 and was elected mayor of Seattle in 1874 and 1885. He also founded Seattle's first water system, established its first community hall and theater, and ultimately made his fortune in real estate. He and his wife built an opulent mansion at present-day 1st Avenue and James Street in 1883 and were leaders in numerous civic and social causes, including public libraries and woman suffrage. Henry Yesler died in 1892, five years after the passing of his wife. [File 286: Full Text >](#)

Henry Yesler arrives in Seattle on October 20, 1852. On October 20, 1852, Henry Yesler (1810-1892) arrives in Seattle. He had come from Ohio via California and Portland, and was seeking a suitable site for a steam-powered mill. The land on the Elliott Bay waterfront had already been taken but Carson Boren (1824?-1912) and Dr. David Maynard (1808-1873) adjusted their claims (which had yet to be filed at the land office) to enable Yesler to locate his mill on the water. [File 2766: Full Text >](#)

Sarah Yesler arrives in Seattle in July 1858. In mid-July 1858, Sarah Burgert Yesler (1822-1887) arrives in Seattle to join her husband Henry Yesler (1810-1892), Seattle pioneer and proprietor of the town's first sawmill.

Upon her arrival, she becomes cook for the sawmill employees, and actively involves herself in the Yesler business enterprises. She is in the forefront of the suffrage movement, active in the Seattle Library Association, a founder of Seattle's first social service organization, and in general, moves at the center of life in Seattle. The Yeslers were spiritualists who refused to join any church and resisted the anti-Chinese agitation in the 1880s. Sarah Yesler formed a passionate attachment to at least one other woman, while remaining a loyal wife to Henry. When she died in 1887, the entire city mourned the passing of one of their leading citizens. [File 2724: Full Text >](#)

Henry Yesler's Native American daughter Julia is born on June 12, 1855. On June 12, 1855, the Native American daughter of Seattle pioneer Henry Yesler (1810-1892) is born. Julia (Benson) Intermela (1855-1907) is the child of Susan, the daughter of Curly (Su-quardle) and Henry Yesler. Curly or Curly Jim was a hereditary chief of the Duwamish tribe. The evidence that the mixed race infant Julia was the offspring of Curly's daughter Susan and Henry Yesler is here laid out by Kathie M. Zetterberg, of Renton, Washington, aided by HistoryLink.org Staff Historian David Wilma. Zetterberg traces her ancestry to Julia (Benson) Intermela (1855-1907). [File 3396: Full Text >](#)

p. 236(248) – early economic activities (agriculture/ cattle ranching/dryland farming/wheat)

Japanese Farming Most early Japanese immigrants to the Pacific Northwest came to work in the labor-intensive industries of timber, railroad construction, fish processing, and agriculture. As they became more settled they started their own farms and eventually became prolific producers. [File 298: Full Text >](#)

Irrigation in the Walla Walla River Valley Irrigation has been the single most crucial element in the Walla Walla Valley's agriculture since 1836, when pioneer missionary Marcus Whitman (1802-1847) dug the first irrigation ditch near his Walla Walla mission. The bottomlands of the Walla Walla and Touchet rivers proved to be uncommonly fertile when supplied with water flowing off the nearby Blue Mountains. Early settlers dug small ditches for their gardens, orchards and pastures. The first large-scale canal projects were launched in 1892 and 1893, including the Hawley Ditch and the Burlingame-Gardena Ditch, which transformed thousands of acres into lush farmland and orchards near Touchet. Other ditch projects soon followed the length of the Walla Walla Valley, including some across the border into Oregon. Artesian wells gushed fountains of groundwater. Irrigation made it possible to grow the crops that the Walla Walla Valley later became famous for: Walla Walla Sweets (onions) and wine grapes from the Walla Walla Valley American Viticultural Area. Many of the original irrigation ditches were converted to more efficient covered pipelines beginning in 2010, as part of a plan to leave more water in the Walla Walla River for fish. [File 10660: Full Text >](#)

Growing Up on Holcomb Farm, Life as a Schoolteacher, and More: A Reminiscence by Lulu Shircliff

Kombol Lulu Mildred (Shircliff) Kombol was born on August 27, 1885, in Walla Walla. She wrote her autobiography at age 89 while living in Seattle with a daughter. Her original account has been slightly expanded to include additional material and has been provided to HistoryLink.org by her grandson, William Kombol, manager of Palmer Coking Coal Company in Black Diamond (King County), Washington. Lulu Mildred Kombol vividly details life growing up on Holcomb Farm on the Cowlitz River and later, her life as a miner's wife and a teacher. She died on January 17, 1977, at age 91. [File 9984: Full Text >](#)

Moxee Company, The (Yakima County) Established in 1886 and located in the Moxee Valley east of the burgeoning town of North Yakima, the Moxee Company was an experimental farm that tested crops for their viability in this area, raised livestock, irrigated some 7,000 acres of land, built a community, and offered land for sale. Articles of Incorporation establishing the company were signed by Gardiner Greene Hubbard (1822-1897), the first president of the National Geographic Society and father-in-law of Alexander Graham Bell; Charles James Bell (1858-1929); William Ker (1852-1925); Samuel Hubbard Jr. (1863-1944), and James Stuart. The corporation operated until June 9, 1955, when the remaining stockholders dissolved it. [File 9218: Full Text >](#)

Ezra Meeker plants hops in the Puyallup valley in March 1865. In March 1865, pioneer Ezra Meeker (1830-1928) plants hop vine cuttings on his farm in the Puyallup valley. The plants flourish and Meeker continues to expand his plantings over the years. By the early 1880s Meeker is a wealthy hop merchant with a branch in London selling hops on the world market. [File 7742: Full Text >](#)

Schanno family plants the first wine grapes in the Yakima Valley near Union Gap in 1869. In 1869, the Charles Schanno family plants the first known grapevines in the Yakima Valley on their farm near Union Gap. Finding the climate ideal for wine grape production, other settlers follow suit. [File 5275: Full Text >](#)

Work on Stillaguamish Slough dike north of Stanwood commences during the summer of 1871. In the summer of 1871, William Moore (1833-1913) and other farmers commission work to begin building a major portion of a three-mile dike from Stanwood (northeastern Snohomish County) north toward Milltown. The dike will be built just inside the Stillaguamish Slough shoreline north of Stanwood. When it is done, 880 acres will be available for cultivation. [File 8575: Full Text >](#)

Charles Carpenter plants hops in Ahtanum near Moxee in 1872. In 1872 (some sources state 1869) Charles Carpenter brings hop root cuttings to the Yakima Valley and grows them on his homestead at Ahtanum near Moxee. The climate and soil prove perfect for the crop, and by 1930 Moxee City is known as the hops capital of the world. [File 5274: Full Text >](#)

Hops grown in Western Washington become an important world crop by 1882. In the early 1880s, Western Washington becomes one of the world's major hop growing regions after blight destroys much of the European hop crop. Hops are a bitter plant in the hemp family used to flavor beer. [File 2003: Full Text >](#)

Wait's Mill, in what will become the town of Waitsburg, begins operation in May 1865. In May 1865, Sylvester M. Wait (d. 1891) begins operating a flour mill in the midst of farmland clustered around the convergence of the Touchet River and Coppei Creek in Walla Walla County. The previous year Wait had met Dennis Willard, an early settler in the Touchet Valley, who was in Lewiston, Idaho, selling supplies to miners. Wait returned with Willard and, on land donated by Willard and William Perry Bruce, set up a mill to process local wheat into flour. The town of Waitsburg will grow up around the mill, which will continue to expand and operate under different owners until it is closed 92 years later. [File 9863: Full Text >](#)

Thorp Mill begins operation in the Kittitas Valley in April 1883. Thorp Mill begins operation in the Kittitas Valley in April 1883. This four-story gristmill, built by Oren Hutchinson, provides farmers throughout the valley both the convenience of local processing for their wheat and an important hub for community activities. [File 5073: Full Text >](#)

John R. Lewis plants the first wheat crop in Douglas County one mile north of Coulee City in 1884. In 1884 John R. Lewis (b. 1855), an early Douglas County pioneer, plants the county's first wheat crop. At the time the Big Bend region's shrub-steppe sagebrush-covered terrain is thought suitable only for grazing cattle and sheep. Douglas disproves this theory, successfully raising a crop and providing Douglas County residents with an example of how they can survive economically after the hard winter of 1889-1890 kills the vast majority of the region's range stock. [File 7964: Full Text >](#)

The Mayview Tramway, conveyor of wheat down canyon to the Snake River, begins operation in 1890. In 1890, the Mayview Tramway, located in northeastern Garfield County, begins operation. For more than 50 years it will haul millions of pounds of grain from a point on top of the Snake River Canyon 1,800 feet down to warehouses at the bottom of the canyon on the river. The tram is located about one mile northeast of the town of Mayview. This rail tramway is not the only method used to transport grain from the top to the bottom of the canyon in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, but it proves to be one of the more sophisticated and successful methods used. [File 7917: Full Text >](#)

First wheat is shipped from Seattle on November 3, 1890. On November 3, 1890, the first wheat to leave Seattle by ship is loaded aboard the British bark *Mary L. Burrill*, bound for Cork, Ireland. The wheat had been stored in a new grain terminal in West Seattle. [File 2150: Full Text >](#)

W. J. Spillman, professor of Agriculture and Horticulture, arrives on Washington State campus in 1894. In 1894, Professor W. J. Spillman arrives on the campus of the future Washington State University in Pullman, which is called the Agricultural College, Experiment Station and School of Science of the State of Washington. Spillman will become widely known for his advances in farming techniques, which will aid wheat farmers in the region. [File 7649: Full Text >](#)

Adams County produces its first bumper crop of wheat in 1897. In 1897, Adams County produces its first bumper crop of wheat. For the first time, raising wheat becomes predominate over cattle ranching in the county. The Big Crop of 1897 inspires a major influx of new settlers to immigrate to the county by the turn of the century. [File 5272: Full Text >](#)

p.236 (248) - early economic activities (fishing)

Bellingham's Croatian Community and Commercial Fishing: A Reminiscence by Steve Kink In this memoir Steve Kink describes growing up in Bellingham's Slav fishing community. Steve's grandparents, Paul Kink (originally Kinkusich) and Maria (Evich) Kink, emigrated to Bellingham from Croatia. His father Mitchell Kink (originally Kinkusich) was born here and he, his brother, and his cousins comprised the second generation. The "Uncle Dick" mentioned here is Dick J. Kink, who was a state legislator from Whatcom County for 12 years during the 1950s and 1960s. All took part in the commercial fishing industry of Bellingham. [File 8384: Full Text >](#)

The first salmon cannery on the Columbia River opens at Eagle Cliff, Wahkiakum County, in 1866. In 1866, brothers William, George, and John Hume, along with Andrew Hapgood, begin operating a small cannery on a scow at Eagle Cliff in eastern Wahkiakum County near the Cowlitz County line in southwest Washington. The Eagle Cliff cannery marks the start of the salmon canning industry that will flourish along the lower Columbia River for the rest of the 1800s before declining in the twentieth century along with the river's once-massive salmon runs. [File 8036: Full Text >](#)

Schooner *Lizzie Colby* lands the first load of cod at J. W. Matheson's new fish curing plant in Anacortes on October 14, 1891. On October 14, 1891, the schooner *Lizzie Colby* lands the first load of Bering Sea cod at the Anacortes wharf of J. W. Matheson's newly constructed cod fish curing plant. This ushers in a new industry for the Skagit County city, in which fish will not only be caught but also processed or canned. Fish processing in Anacortes begins with cod and diversifies, with salmon canning growing into the largest production. By 1922, twelve canneries and curing plants will stand along Guemes Channel, bringing in millions of dollars of profits and wages to the city. The industry will face dramatic changes, but three large Anacortes seafood plants will continue the tradition in the twenty-first century. [File 9873: Full Text >](#)

Wawona, Pacific Lumber and Codfishing Schooner The schooner Wawona, launched at Fairhaven, California in 1897, was the largest three-masted sailing schooner ever built in North America. For 17 years, Wawona hauled lumber up and down the Pacific Coast. In 1914, she was sold to the Robinson Fisheries Company of Anacortes, Washington, and for the next 30 years was employed in the Bering Sea codfishing trade. In 1964, a group of concerned citizens from King County, Washington, purchased her in an effort to preserve her as a maritime museum. Wawona became a National Historic Site in 1970, the first ship in the nation to be listed on the National Register. Stricken with water intrusion and a beetle infestation, the Wawona was reluctantly deemed too expensive to restore and was demolished in 2009. [File 2072: Full Text >](#)

p. 236 – William Hume

The first salmon cannery on the Columbia River opens at Eagle Cliff, Wahkiakum County, in 1866. In 1866, brothers William, George, and John Hume, along with Andrew Hapgood, begin operating a small cannery on a scow at Eagle Cliff in eastern Wahkiakum County near the Cowlitz County line in southwest Washington. The Eagle Cliff cannery marks the start of the salmon canning industry that will flourish along the lower Columbia River for the rest of the 1800s before declining in the twentieth century along with the river's once-massive salmon runs. [File 8036: Full Text >](#)

p. 236 (248) - early economic activities (mining)

Gold in the Pacific Northwest The discovery of gold in California in 1848 sent would-be millionaires on a quest for treasure throughout the West. By 1900, major strikes had been made in Oregon, Idaho, Nevada, Alaska, and western Canada. Although prospectors found relatively little gold within the borders of what is now Washington state, their very presence, as they rushed from one rumored bonanza to another, created new patterns of transportation, settlement, and commerce. Miners traveling to gold fields on tributaries of the upper Columbia River in the 1850s stimulated development along the lower Columbia. Walla Walla was the largest town in Washington in the 1860s and 1870s because of its position as a supply center for mines in north central and southern Idaho. Spokane boomed as a result of discoveries in northern Idaho in the 1880s. The Klondike Gold Rush of 1897 yanked Seattle out of a recession and transformed both the city's infrastructure and character. Gold rushes were defining events not only for the places where the gold was found, but for the places the miners passed through in search of gold. [File 7162: Full Text >](#)

California Gold Rush spurs economic development of the Northwest in 1849. In 1849, the California Gold Rush results in a flood of immigrants to the West Coast whose demand for lumber triggers economic development in the Pacific Northwest. Lumber from the Columbia River and from Puget Sound is more plentiful and more easily transported by sea to San Francisco than from the Sierra Nevada. As California grows, so will the timber industry and the economy of the Northwest. [File 5257: Full Text >](#)

Coal in the Puget Sound Region The history of coal in Puget Sound is tied to the development and expansion of the railroad in the West. Locomotives burned coal, and coal, which is heavy and bulky, could not be transported without the railroad. These two industries grew together in the region, the health of each enabling the growth of both. Washington coal, used to fuel locomotives and steamships, and to heat homes in the Pacific Northwest and elsewhere, found a major market in California. The largest mines were located in King County (Black Diamond, Franklin, and Renton), Pierce County (Carbonado), Kittitas County (Roslyn), and Lewis County (Centralia). In the nineteenth century coal was king, but increasingly in the twentieth century oil and natural gas were competitors. Across the country coal is widely used as a fuel to generate electricity, but in the Pacific Northwest, coal's fate was sealed by the move toward hydroelectric generation, although when hydroelectric dam construction largely ended in the 1960s, some utilities turned back to coal as one way to meet demand. In Washington state the last underground mine closed in 1975, and the last open pit mine, which operated at Centralia, closed in 2006. [File 5158: Full Text >](#)

p. 237 – Mining conditions

Roslyn coalminers strike, precipitating the importation of black miners, on August 17, 1888. On August 17, 1888, Roslyn miners strike for an eight-hour day, and the Northern Pacific Coal Company brings in trainloads of black miners as strikebreakers. To protect the strikebreakers and to intimidate miners, the company hires 40 armed

guards. This precipitates a legal and constitutional crisis, as Territorial Governor Eugene Semple (1840-1908) fears that this armed body constitutes a virtual private militia. He calls it "an outrage" and orders the guards dispersed or arrested. The strike will be settled, and the guards disbanded. Yet many of the black miners and their families will remain in Roslyn for decades. [File 9240: Full Text >](#)

Worst coalmine disaster in Washington history kills 45 miners at Roslyn on May 10, 1892. At 1:45 p.m. on Tuesday, May 10, 1892, an explosion and fire kill 45 miners in the Northern Pacific Coal Company's No. 1 mine at Roslyn, located in the eastern foothills of the Cascade Mountains in Central Washington. It will prove to be the worst coalmine disaster in Washington state history. [File 8016: Full Text >](#)

Explosion and fire kill 10 men in a Roslyn coal mine on October 3, 1909. On Sunday, October 3, 1909, an explosion and fire at the Northwestern Improvement Company's No. 4 mine in Roslyn kills 10 workers. A column of flame 100 to 400 feet high ignites the head frame, tibble, snow sheds, and other buildings. Typically 500 to 600 men work in the mine, but Sunday is a maintenance shift and fewer workers are on duty. Newly developed respirators on display at the Alaska-Yukon-Pacific Exposition in Seattle will be rushed to Roslyn to aid in recovery. [File 8021: Full Text >](#)

p. 237, 249 - early economic activities (timber/sawmills)

Settlers begin loading logs on the ship *Leonesa* in King County's first export on December 9, 1851. On December 9, 1851, all seven adult male settlers at New York (renamed Alki) begin cutting down trees and loading lumber on the ship *Leonesa*, bound for San Francisco. This represents the future King County's first export and first significant logging. The seven men are Arthur Denny (1822-1899), David Denny (1832-1903), Lee Terry (1818-1862), Carson Boren (1824?-1912), William Bell (1817-1887), John Low (1820-1888), and Charles Terry (1829-1867). [File 742: Full Text >](#)

p. 237 - early economic activities (logging working conditions)

p. 237 – Henry Yesler

Yesler, Henry L. (1810-1892) Henry L. Yesler secured Seattle's future success by establishing Puget Sound's first steam-powered sawmill in the young village in 1852. He maintained good relations with local Native Americans, and sired at least one child by a Indian woman before his wife Sarah arrived from Ohio in 1858. Yesler served as King County's first auditor in 1853 and was elected mayor of Seattle in 1874 and 1885. He also founded Seattle's first water system, established its first community hall and theater, and ultimately made his fortune in real estate. He and his wife built an opulent mansion at present-day 1st Avenue and James Street in 1883 and were leaders in numerous civic and social causes, including public libraries and woman suffrage. Henry Yesler died in 1892, five years after the passing of his wife. [File 286: Full Text >](#)

Henry Yesler arrives in Seattle on October 20, 1852. On October 20, 1852, Henry Yesler (1810-1892) arrives in Seattle. He had come from Ohio via California and Portland, and was seeking a suitable site for a steam-powered mill. The land on the Elliott Bay waterfront had already been taken but Carson Boren (1824?-1912) and Dr. David Maynard (1808-1873) adjusted their claims (which had yet to be filed at the land office) to enable Yesler to locate his mill on the water. [File 2766: Full Text >](#)

Yesler's Mill, the first steam-powered sawmill on Puget Sound, is under construction in Seattle on October 30, 1852. On October 30, 1852, the Olympia newspaper *The Columbian* reports that "a new steam mill is in process

of erection by Mr. H. L. Yesler at Seattle." The region's first steam-powered saw mill begins operation in the following spring and quickly establishes Seattle as the economic capital of Puget Sound. [File 5394: Full Text >](#)

Henry Yesler's Native American daughter Julia is born on June 12, 1855. On June 12, 1855, the Native American daughter of Seattle pioneer Henry Yesler (1810-1892) is born. Julia (Benson) Intermela (1855-1907) is the child of Susan, the daughter of Curly (Su-quardle) and Henry Yesler. Curly or Curly Jim was a hereditary chief of the Duwamish tribe. The evidence that the mixed race infant Julia was the offspring of Curly's daughter Susan and Henry Yesler is here laid out by Kathie M. Zetterberg, of Renton, Washington, aided by HistoryLink.org Staff Historian David Wilma. Zetterberg traces her ancestry to Julia (Benson) Intermela (1855-1907). [File 3396: Full Text >](#)

Sarah Yesler arrives in Seattle in July 1858. In mid-July 1858, Sarah Burgert Yesler (1822-1887) arrives in Seattle to join her husband Henry Yesler (1810-1892), Seattle pioneer and proprietor of the town's first sawmill. Upon her arrival, she becomes cook for the sawmill employees, and actively involves herself in the Yesler business enterprises. She is in the forefront of the suffrage movement, active in the Seattle Library Association, a founder of Seattle's first social service organization, and in general, moves at the center of life in Seattle. The Yeslers were spiritualists who refused to join any church and resisted the anti-Chinese agitation in the 1880s. Sarah Yesler formed a passionate attachment to at least one other woman, while remaining a loyal wife to Henry. When she died in 1887, the entire city mourned the passing of one of their leading citizens. [File 2724: Full Text >](#)

Seattle's Yesler Hall is completed in 1869. In 1869, Yesler Hall is built to be used for community meetings and events. Located at the southeast corner of Cherry Street and Front Street (later renamed 1st Avenue), it becomes the first community hall built in Seattle for this purpose. [File 178: Full Text >](#)

Voters elect Henry Yesler as mayor of the City of Seattle on July 13, 1874. On July 13, 1874, voters elect Republican Henry Yesler (1810-1892) as mayor of the City of Seattle. [File 2891: Full Text >](#)

Henry Yesler commits fraud in Washington's first lottery held on July 4, 1876. On July 4, 1876, the Grand Lottery of Washington winners are supposed to be drawn. Yesler Sawmill, the Seattle establishment that in the early 1850s was the first steam sawmill in Washington, is advertised as the Grand Prize. But then, Henry Yesler (1810-1892), the organizer, cancels the drawing. [File 223: Full Text >](#)

Voters elect Henry Yesler to a second term as mayor of the City of Seattle on July 13, 1885. On July 13, 1885, voters elect Republican Henry L. Yesler (1810-1892) to a second term as mayor of the City of Seattle. [File 5734: Full Text >](#)

p. 238 – industrialization (immigrant workers)

p. 238 – Railroad and Railway Acts (industrialization)

p. 240 – Oregon Steam Navigation Company

- **The Ilwaco Steam Navigation Company's railroad makes its first run from Ilwaco to Long Beach on July 19, 1888.** On July 19, 1888, the Ilwaco Steam Navigation Company's railroad makes its first run from Ilwaco to Long Beach. In 1889 tracks will be laid to Nahcotta, completing the line. The railroad, soon to be called the Ilwaco Railroad and Steam Navigation Company but unofficially known as the Clamshell Railroad, will serve tourists, residents, and Willapa Bay shellfish growers, farmers, and loggers for 42 years. [File 9813: Full Text >](#)

p. 240,243 – Henry Villard

Commercial coal production begins at Black Diamond in March 1885. In March 1885, commercial coal production begins at Mine No. 14 of the Black Diamond Coal Mining Co. in the Green River Coal Field in King County. The completion of rail service on December 12, 1884, allows the transportation of heavy equipment to the site and movement of coal to the King Street Coal Wharf in Seattle. [File 3389: Full Text >](#)

p. 240 – Walla Walla and Columbia River Railroads

Seattle citizens start work on Seattle & Walla Walla Railroad on May 1, 1874. On Friday, May 1, 1874, the citizens of Seattle travel by boat, foot, and horse to the mouth of the Duwamish River to start work on Seattle's second railroad, the Seattle & Walla Walla. Nearly every store in town is closed as merchants, teachers, clergymen, bankers, and saloon keepers work together to clear land for the first railroad out of Seattle and over the Cascade Mountains to Walla Walla, then the wealthiest city in Washington Territory. By the end of the year, volunteers and paid workers will have laid twelve miles of track. [File 924: Full Text >](#)

p. 240 – Dr. Dorsey Baker

Washington Territorial Legislature charts Whitman Seminary on December 20, 1859. On December 20, 1859, the Washington Territorial Legislature approves the first charter for an institution of higher educational in the territory. The charter is for Whitman Seminary, a coeducational pre-collegiate academy, which is to be located at the mission site where Marcus and Narcissa Whitman worked from 1836 until 1847, when they were killed by a group of Cayuse Indians. The first classes are not held until 1866, and the school begins in the city of Walla Walla rather than at the nearby mission site. After many years of struggle, in 1882 Whitman College begins offering college curricula and the school attracts more support and students. During the twentieth century Whitman College will emerge as a distinguished liberal arts college. [File 8311: Full Text >](#)

Whitman College opens in Walla Walla on September 4, 1882. On September 4, 1882, classes begin at Whitman College on the campus of Whitman Seminary in Walla Walla, Washington Territory. Originally chartered in 1859 as a coeducational pre-collegiate academy to memorialize missionaries Marcus and Narcissa Whitman, Whitman Seminary had begun offering classes in Walla Walla in 1866 but struggled to remain open. By 1882, trustees decided that if the school were to survive it needed to expand into a college. Through local and national support, particularly through the Congregational American College and Education Society, Whitman College will establish itself as a traditional liberal arts college. After its first 25 years, Whitman will separate itself from the Congregational Church. In time, it will develop into a distinguished liberal arts college. [File 8312: Full Text >](#)

p. 241 – Oregon Railway and Navigation Company

First trains cross the Northern Pacific Railroad bridge spanning the Columbia River between Pasco and Kennewick on December 3, 1887. On December 3, 1887, the Northern Pacific Railroad opens a temporary bridge across the Columbia River from Pasco in Franklin County to Kennewick in what is now Benton County. For the first time, transcontinental trains, which previously crossed the river by ferry, are able to run straight through to Tacoma via Stampede Pass. Part of the temporary bridge is soon swept away by winter ice, but it reopens in April 1888. A permanent bridge is in place by July 1888, marking final completion of the Northern Pacific Railroad. [File 5365: Full Text >](#)

p. 241 – Northern Pacific Railroad

Northern Pacific Railroad and Seattle Development The Northern Pacific Railroad played a pivotal role in the development of railroads in Seattle and in the Puget Sound region. The company's decision to locate its Western terminus in Tacoma rather than in Seattle brought the city together to form its own railroad company, the Seattle & Walla Walla. In the 1870s and 1880s, Seattle's relationship with Northern Pacific was fraught with highs and considerable lows. In the 1890s, however, the railroad's commitment to Seattle became clear when the company purchased small regional railroad interests and began contributing rails, stations, and services to the local infrastructure. [File 1734: Full Text >](#)

Northern Pacific sets off an economic boom and a bidding war in Puget Sound region beginning in August 1870. About August 2, 1870, immediately after Northern Pacific Railroad surveyors arrive in Seattle, speculators begin a buying-frenzy of Seattle real estate. One Northern Pacific team will survey a route from Yesler's Wharf at the foot of Mill Street (later renamed Yesler Way), proceeding south to Olympia. Another team will survey a route that goes around the south end of Lake Washington and over the Cascade Mountains. Seattle property immediately doubles in price and some real estate increases three to four times. Puget Sound towns vie for the Northern Pacific terminus and within a couple of years a bidding war has erupted among towns over which one would donate the most land, cash, and bonds to the Northern Pacific. [File 1592: Full Text >](#)

Northern Pacific Railroad announces Tacoma terminus on July 14, 1873. On July 14, 1873, an expectant crowd gathers at Yesler Mill in Seattle to hear Arthur Denny (1822-1899) read a telegram from Northern Pacific Railroad executives R. D. Rice and J. C. Ainsworth announcing the railroad's decision on where to locate the terminus. The crowd expects the terminus to be located in Seattle, but Denny opens the telegram and reads, "We have located the terminus on Commencement Bay." Seattleites are shocked, dismayed, and angered that the planned transcontinental railroad and its coveted wealth of goods and passengers would serve Puget Sound not from Seattle but from Tacoma, then barely a village. The reaction in Tacoma is quite the opposite -- celebration. Promoter Matthew McCarver had platted Tacoma City on Commencement Bay speculating that the railroad would come there and his investment proved a good one. [File 922: Full Text >](#)

p. 241,242 – Jay Cooke

Coal in the Puget Sound Region The history of coal in Puget Sound is tied to the development and expansion of the railroad in the West. Locomotives burned coal, and coal, which is heavy and bulky, could not be transported without the railroad. These two industries grew together in the region, the health of each enabling the growth of both. Washington coal, used to fuel locomotives and steamships, and to heat homes in the Pacific Northwest and elsewhere, found a major market in California. The largest mines were located in King County (Black Diamond, Franklin, and Renton), Pierce County (Carbonado), Kittitas County (Roslyn), and Lewis County (Centralia). In the nineteenth century coal was king, but increasingly in the twentieth century oil and natural gas were competitors. Across the country coal is widely used as a fuel to generate electricity, but in the Pacific Northwest, coal's fate was sealed by the move toward hydroelectric generation, although when hydroelectric dam construction largely ended in the 1960s, some utilities turned back to coal as one way to meet demand. In Washington state the last underground mine closed in 1975, and the last open pit mine, which operated at Centralia, closed in 2006. [File 5158: Full Text >](#)

p. 242 – Leland Stanford

Coal in the Puget Sound Region The history of coal in Puget Sound is tied to the development and expansion of the railroad in the West. Locomotives burned coal, and coal, which is heavy and bulky, could not be transported without the railroad. These two industries grew together in the region, the health of each enabling the growth of both. Washington coal, used to fuel locomotives and steamships, and to heat homes in the Pacific Northwest and elsewhere, found a major market in California. The largest mines were located in King County (Black Diamond, Franklin, and Renton), Pierce County (Carbonado), Kittitas County (Roslyn), and Lewis County (Centralia). In the nineteenth century coal was king, but increasingly in the twentieth century oil and natural gas were competitors. Across the country coal is widely used as a fuel to generate electricity, but in the Pacific Northwest, coal's fate was sealed by the move toward hydroelectric generation, although when hydroelectric dam construction largely ended in the 1960s, some utilities turned back to coal as one way to meet demand. In Washington state the last underground mine closed in 1975, and the last open pit mine, which operated at Centralia, closed in 2006. [File 5158: Full Text >](#)

p. 243 – James J. Hill

Hill, James J. (1838-1916) James J. Hill, nicknamed the Empire Builder, embodied the archetypal American story of success, rising from poor dock clerk to multimillionaire railroad magnate. In time, Hill had gained control of the Great Northern, Northern Pacific, and the Burlington railroads. James J. Hill was perhaps more significant to the framing of the empire of the Pacific Northwest than any other individual. His decisions about rail routes and station stops had the power to turn fledgling communities into robust cities -- and to cause other hopeful towns to die a bornin'. Settlers cultivated land along the margins of the tracks he laid, later shipping the products of their farms to distant markets via the trains. Hill's impact on the economic development of the Midwestern and Pacific Northwestern regions of the United States is difficult to overestimate. [File 8115: Full Text >](#)

p. 244 – Population impact of railroads (immigrants)

Sephardic Jews arrive in Seattle in 1902. In 1902, the first two Sephardic Jews (of Spanish origin), Jack Policar (d. 1961) and Solomo Calvo (d. 1964), arrive in Seattle from the island of Marmara, Turkey. [File 111: Full Text >](#)

Sephardic Jews in Washington Sephardic Jews, descendants of Jews expelled from Spain in 1492, first settled in Seattle in 1902. For generations after the expulsion, Sephardim lived throughout the Mediterranean lands of the Ottoman Empire, where they were able to preserve their religion and cultural traditions, and even developed a language, Ladino, based on the Spanish of their former homeland. Around the turn of the twentieth century, with the empire declining and increasingly unstable, a large wave of Sephardic Jews began immigrating to the United States. For a variety of reasons, a significant proportion of those immigrants settled in Washington, ultimately giving Seattle one of the largest populations of Sephardic Jews in the United States, so that "[s]ince World War I, Seattle has had the largest percentage of Sephardim compared to the total Jewish population of any U.S. city" ("Jewish Archives Collection"). In the century since the first Sephardim settled in Seattle, Washington's Sephardic Jewish community has maintained a strong cultural presence and contributed to the growth of the state's economy and Seattle's diverse artistic development. [File 10778: Full Text >](#)

George and Mary Jane Washington found the town of Centerville (now Centralia) on January 8, 1875. On January 8, 1875, George Washington (1817-1905) and his wife Mary Jane file the plat that establishes the town of Centerville, soon to be renamed Centralia, in Lewis County in Southwest Washington. George Washington, a pioneer from Virginia, is the son of an African American slave and a woman of English descent. For the next 30 years, he is a leading citizen, promoter, and benefactor of the town he founds. [File 5276: Full Text >](#)

p. 244, 249 – Scandinavian immigrants to Washington

Norwegians in Seattle and King County By the 1880s, Norwegians were arriving in the Pacific Northwest in noticeable numbers. By 1910, more than 7,000 Norwegians lived and worked in the region. They lived all over King County but especially in Ballard, and worked as loggers, farmers, engineers, entrepreneurs, boat builders, and fishermen. Seattle's many well known Norwegians include world-class ski-jumper Olav Ulland, Senator Warren G. Magnuson, and Washington Governor Arthur Langlie. [File 3476: Full Text >](#)

Swedes in Seattle and King County Prior to the great fire of June 6, 1889, Seattle's Swedish population was small, as it was in the rest of the northwest region. The census of 1880 counted only 190 people of Scandinavian heritage in all of King County. A tremendous influx took place between 1890 and 1910 when close to 150,000 Scandinavians settled in the Pacific Northwest, thus making them the largest foreign-born ethnic group in the state. In Seattle of 1910 they numbered 19,046, 31.3 percent of the foreign born, and of these 8,678 were Swedes. In 1920 Swedes had grown to 10,253 decreasing slightly to 9,634 in 1930. Swedes worked in the woods, in the Ballard mills, on the railroads building tunnels and laying tracks, in construction (contributing both labor and architectural skills), in the mines at Coal Creek, and on the docks at Seattle's harbor, and as farmers around King County. [File 3473: Full Text >](#)

Nordic Heritage Museum (Seattle) The Nordic Heritage Museum in Seattle has the distinction of being the only museum in the country that promotes the heritage and culture of the five Scandinavian countries and honors the legacy of their immigrants to the United States. Located in an old Seattle public school building in the Ballard neighborhood, the museum proudly flies the flags of Denmark, Norway, Sweden, Iceland, and Finland. The museum opened its doors on April 12, 1980, in the old Webster School at 3014 NW 67th Street after years of discussion, dreaming, and hard work. [File 9952: Full Text >](#)

Scandinavian Immigration and Aid Society formed in Seattle in 1876. In 1876, the Scandinavian Immigration and Aid Society forms in Seattle. The purpose of the society is to encourage migration to Seattle from Scandinavia (Norway, Sweden, Denmark, and Iceland). [File 3311: Full Text >](#)

p. 244 – Chinese immigrants to Washington

Chinese Americans Chinese immigrants played a critical role in the development of Washington Territory and of Seattle. By 1880, more than 3,000 Chinese lived in Washington Territory and worked in various industries. [File 2060: Full Text >](#)

The first salmon cannery on the Columbia River opens at Eagle Cliff, Wahkiakum County, in 1866. In 1866, brothers William, George, and John Hume, along with Andrew Hapgood, begin operating a small cannery on a scow at Eagle Cliff in eastern Wahkiakum County near the Cowlitz County line in southwest Washington. The Eagle Cliff cannery marks the start of the salmon canning industry that will flourish along the lower Columbia River for the rest of the 1800s before declining in the twentieth century along with the river's once-massive salmon runs. [File 8036: Full Text >](#)

Chin Chun Hock opens the Wa Chong Company in Seattle on December 15, 1868. On December 15, 1868, Chinese settler Chin Chun Hock (1844-1927) opens the Wa Chong Company, a general-merchandise store, at the foot of Mill Street (later renamed Yesler Way) in Seattle. Chin, believed to be the city's first Chinese immigrant, traveled in 1860 from China to San Francisco and then north to Seattle, where he found work in the Yesler Mill cookhouse. Chin Chun Hock's original partner in the Wa Chong Company is Chun Wa (d. 1873); Chin Gee Hee (1844-1929) will become junior partner following Chun Wa's death. The store sells Chinese goods, tea, rice, coffee, flour, and fireworks, but the company's most profitable business is labor contracting. It recruits and places Chinese

immigrants in jobs ranging from domestic work to building railroads. Both Chin Chun Hock and Chin Gee Hee will survive Seattle's anti-Chinese riots in 1886 and the 1889 Seattle Fire, and both will become wealthy. Each will return to live permanently in China in the early 1900s, but the Wa Chong Company will operate in Seattle until 1953. The store's final location, the East Kong Yick Building at 719 S King Street, will become home to the Wing Luke Museum in 2008. [File 10800: Full Text >](#)

p. 244 – Japanese/Filipino immigrants to Washington

Japanese Farming Most early Japanese immigrants to the Pacific Northwest came to work in the labor-intensive industries of timber, railroad construction, fish processing, and agriculture. As they became more settled they started their own farms and eventually became prolific producers. [File 298: Full Text >](#)

Japanese Immigration to the Puget Sound Region Japanese immigrants began arriving in the Puget Sound area in the 1890s to work in the labor-intensive industries of railroad construction, logging, mining, fish processing, and agriculture. The Immigration Act of 1924 virtually ended all immigration from Japan and Asia. [File 300: Full Text >](#)

p. 244 – Bailey Gatzert

Gatzert, Bailey (1829-1893) In 1875, Bailey Gatzert became the first and to date (2005) only Jewish mayor of Seattle. Gatzert was partner and general manager of Schwabacher and Co., one of Seattle's earliest hardware and general mercantile stores, later to become the start of wholesale trade in Seattle. He was involved in many business and civic ventures critical to the establishment of early Seattle commerce and infrastructure. He was married to Babette (Schwabacher) Gatzert. [File 86: Full Text >](#)

p. 245-246 – Chinese Exclusion Act

Anti-Chinese Activism -- Seattle Initially Seattle's whites welcomed the aid of Chinese labor, but this attitude soured during the hard times of the 1870s and led to passage of the national Chinese Exclusion Act in 1882. On February 7, 1886, a throng of workers rounded up every Chinese person in Seattle and herded them to the waterfront and a waiting steamer. Civic leaders attempted to prevent the disorderly exodus. Eventually the Chinese were expelled, but not before violence that resulted in at least one death. [File 1057: Full Text >](#)

Miners force Chinese from Newcastle mine on June 3, 1876. On June 3, 1876, miners drive 40 Chinese mineworkers from the Newcastle mines. Newcastle is located in the Puget Sound region in east King County. As of January, 300 miners were employed there. [File 219: Full Text >](#)

White and Indian hop pickers attack Chinese in Squak (Issaquah) on September 7, 1885. On September 7, 1885, in the eastern King County community of Squak (renamed Issaquah), white and Indian hop pickers gang up on Chinese workers brought in by the Wold Bros. to pick hops at a cheaper price. On two successive days, white and Indian hop pickers try to force the Chinese workers out. When that fails, a gang of seven men (five whites and two Indians) attack the Chinese camp. They fire into tents of sleeping men, and kill three Chinese men and wound three. The perpetrators are brought to trial, but acquitted. This file includes background information and a verbatim account of the event given in 1887 by George W. Tibbetts (b. 1845), an anti-Chinese hop farmer and merchant. [File 2746: Full Text >](#)

Tacoma expels the entire Chinese community on November 3, 1885. On November 3, 1885, a mob, including many of Tacoma's leading citizens, marches on the Chinese community and forces everyone out of their houses and out of town. Tacoma mayor Jacob Robert Weisbach deemed the Chinese "a curse" and a "filthy horde." The Tacoma Ledger and its editor Jack Comerford, the carpenters' union, and many workers and business people had spewed racist rhetoric against the Chinese for months. Mass meetings inflamed the hatred and the few dissenters, most notably Ezra Meeker and the Reverend W. D. McFarland, were ineffectual against it. The community was given a deadline to get out by November 3. In reaction to the threats, about 150 frightened Chinese persons left Tacoma before the deadline. The mob herded another 200 out on November 3. They lost their homes and most of their possessions, and they never returned. In 1993, the Tacoma City Council passed a resolution to make amends and to apologize for the former city leaders' actions. [File 5063: Full Text >](#)

Tacoma expels the entire Chinese community on November 3, 1885. On November 3, 1885, a mob, including many of Tacoma's leading citizens, marches on the Chinese community and forces everyone out of their houses and out of town. Tacoma mayor Jacob Robert Weisbach deemed the Chinese "a curse" and a "filthy horde." The Tacoma Ledger and its editor Jack Comerford, the carpenters' union, and many workers and business people had spewed racist rhetoric against the Chinese for months. Mass meetings inflamed the hatred and the few dissenters, most notably Ezra Meeker and the Reverend W. D. McFarland, were ineffectual against it. The community was given a deadline to get out by November 3. In reaction to the threats, about 150 frightened Chinese persons left Tacoma before the deadline. The mob herded another 200 out on November 3. They lost their homes and most of their possessions, and they never returned. In 1993, the Tacoma City Council passed a resolution to make amends and to apologize for the former city leaders' actions. [File 5063: Full Text >](#)

Mobs forcibly expel most of Seattle's Chinese residents beginning on February 7, 1886. On February 7, 1886, violence breaks out in Seattle as a mob starts to forcibly expel most of the city's Chinese population. The next day one man dies and four are injured when they attack Home Guards protecting Chinese residents. Martial law is declared and will last for two weeks. President Grover Cleveland (1837-1908) will order United States troops to Seattle, where they will remain until summer. Though most of Seattle will rebound quickly from the crisis, it will take the city's Chinese community 20 years to recover. [File 2745: Full Text >](#)

Goon Dip (ca.1862-1933). Goon Dip was a phenomenon -- a visionary and wealthy entrepreneur, public servant, philanthropist, and the most influential Chinese in the Pacific Coast during the early years of the twentieth century. He had some luck, which he acknowledged and honored, but he also had to breach the virulent anti-Chinese wall of the times to attain success. And he did it with a high level of civility and compassion. One obituary eulogized: "He brought the innate courtesy, the kindly philosophy, the 'do unto others' doctrine common to all faiths into his daily life ..." (*The Seattle Daily Times*). [File 9026: Full Text >](#)

Chinese Exclusion Repeal Act, aka the Magnuson Act, is signed on December 17, 1943. On December 17, 1943, the Chinese Exclusion Repeal Act of 1943 -- aka the Magnuson Act -- is signed into law, permitting Chinese immigration for the first time since the Chinese Exclusion Act of 1882. It also allows Chinese people already in the United States to become citizens for the first time since the Naturalization Act of 1790. Democratic U.S. Representative (later senator) Warren G. Magnuson (1905-1989) of Washington state submits the bill. Throughout his 36-year career in Congress, Magnuson will champion improved relations with China, regardless of the political party in power. [File 8993: Full Text >](#)

Luke, Wing (1925-1965) Wing Luke was elected to the Seattle City Council in 1962, and became the first Chinese American from a large mainland city to hold such an office. Just three years later, in 1965, his promising political career was extinguished when he died in a plane crash. [File 2047: Full Text >](#)

Locke, Gary Faye (b. 1950) Gary Locke rose through the political ranks from humble, minority beginnings to become King County's first Asian American executive in 1994, the first Asian American governor in the United

States in 1996, and the first Asian American to deliver a response to a U.S. president's State of the Union address, in 2003. He has been acknowledged by friend and foe as a quintessential American success story, and has often used his own family's success as a symbol of the American dream. He was characterized as a neo-liberal, a "New Democrat" politician, and he experienced mixed success in public office, handicapped at times by Republican legislative majorities and by economic woes that left the state with huge deficits. In 2003, he announced his retirement from political life. After his second term as governor ended in 2005, he joined the Seattle law office of Davis Wright Tremaine, where he specialized in trade and governmental relations. In February 2009 President Barack Obama (b. 1961) nominated Gary Locke to be United States secretary of Commerce, and he was confirmed by the senate on March 25, 2009. In the summer of 2011 he was appointed and confirmed as the U.S. ambassador to China, the first Chinese American to hold this post. He is married to Mona Lee Locke and they have three children. [File 7830: Full Text >](#)

p. 248 – Desert Land Act

p. 250 – Dawes Act

Dawes Severalty Act divides Indian reservations among individual members on February 8, 1887. On February 8, 1887, the Dawes Severalty Act, also called the Indian Allotment Act, divides Indian reservations among individual tribal members in an effort to assimilate Native Americans into the U.S. population as "responsible farmers." Reservations are divided into 160-acre allotments and assigned to individual members. Unassigned lands are made available to white homesteaders. [File 2600: Full Text >](#)

p. 249 – Walla Walla (1878) delegation

U.S. President Millard Fillmore establishes Washington Territory on March 2, 1853. On March 2, 1853, U.S. President Millard Fillmore signs a bill creating the Territory of Washington out of the Territory of Oregon. The new territory's boundaries are: north, 49 degree North Latitude; south, approximately due east from the mouth of the Columbia River; east, the Rocky Mountains; west, the Pacific Ocean. The eastern part of the territory would later become part of the states of Idaho and Montana. [File 5244: Full Text >](#)

First Washington Constitutional Convention convenes in Walla Walla on June 11, 1878. On June 11, 1878, Washington Territory legislators meet in Walla Walla to craft a state constitution. Walla Walla is the largest city in the territory in 1878 and the most logical place for politicians to meet. Legislators arrive in June and complete the constitution in 40 days. The constitution they draft will be ratified at the next general election in November, but later rejected by Congress.

[File 7648: Full Text >](#)

Congressional Delegations from Washington State This is a complete historical list of the Washington territorial and state delegation to the United States Congress. Washington Territory was created on March 2, 1853, and the Territory became a state on November 11, 1889. [File 5463: Full Text >](#)

p. 249 – Omnibus Bill (Washington statehood 2/22/1889)

p. 249 - Washington statehood

Washington Territory citizens vote for statehood on November 5, 1878. On November 5, 1878, the voters of the Territory of Washington approve a resolution asking the U.S. Congress for admission to statehood. Congress declines. Eleven more years pass before statehood is achieved. [File 5590: Full Text >](#)

Washington statehood bill is introduced in U.S. Congress on December 10, 1878. On December 10, 1878, the first bill for Washington statehood is introduced in the United States Congress. [File 228: Full Text >](#)

Washington State Constitutional Convention delegates frame constitution stipulating that voters must be male, but append separate woman suffrage and Prohibition amendments on August 17, 1889. On August 17, 1889, delegates to the Washington State Constitutional Convention in Olympia tack two amendments, one for woman suffrage and the other for Prohibition, onto the ballot by which voters will decide whether or not to ratify their new state constitution. The ballot also asks voters to decide which city should be the new state's capital. [File 5503: Full Text >](#)

Washington is admitted as the 42nd state to the United States of America on November 11, 1889. On November 11, 1889, Washington becomes the 42nd state of the United States of America. [File 5210: Full Text >](#)

Congressional Delegations from Washington State This is a complete historical list of the Washington territorial and state delegation to the United States Congress. Washington Territory was created on March 2, 1853, and the Territory became a state on November 11, 1889. [File 5463: Full Text >](#)

First Washington Constitutional Convention convenes in Walla Walla on June 11, 1878. On June 11, 1878, Washington Territory legislators meet in Walla Walla to craft a state constitution. Walla Walla is the largest city in the territory in 1878 and the most logical place for politicians to meet. Legislators arrive in June and complete the constitution in 40 days. The constitution they draft will be ratified at the next general election in November, but later rejected by Congress. [File 7648: Full Text >](#)

p. 249 – Washington State Constitution (Washington statehood)

Washington State Constitutional Convention delegates frame constitution stipulating that voters must be male, but append separate woman suffrage and Prohibition amendments on August 17, 1889. On August 17, 1889, delegates to the Washington State Constitutional Convention in Olympia tack two amendments, one for woman suffrage and the other for Prohibition, onto the ballot by which voters will decide whether or not to ratify their new state constitution. The ballot also asks voters to decide which city should be the new state's capital. [File 5503: Full Text >](#)

CHAPTER 9: THE PROGRESSIVE ERA and the TWENTIES, 1889-1929

p. 255 – Dr. Mary Latham

p. 256 – industrialization/mass production

Business and Industry in Seattle in 1900 A look at Seattle area businesses in 1900 indicates that the economy was simpler, life less complicated, labor harder, travel slower, and that opportunities to enhance one's quality of life were

rarer. The modest turn-of-the-century Seattle skyline was that of a town, but within a decade steel-framed skyscrapers poked high crowns into the heavens above a true city. Historian James R. Warren surveys local industries and businesses at the beginning of the twentieth century in this special essay, adapted with permission from the *Puget Sound Business Journal*. [File 1669: Full Text >](#)

[Seattle Coal & Transportation Company begins operating Seattle's first railroad on March 22, 1872.](#)

On March 22, 1872, the Seattle Coal & Transportation Company begins operating Seattle's first railroad. Established by founders of the Seattle Coal Company, it is used to carry coal from a dock on the south end of Lake Union to coal bunkers at the foot of Pike Street, on Elliott Bay. The coal arrives at the south Lake Union dock via a tortuous route from a mine in Newcastle, located near the south end of Lake Washington. Coal is transported from the Newcastle mine to the Lake Washington shore via tramway. It is then loaded into scows guided across Lake Washington by tugboats. Arriving at a strip of land called the Montlake Portage (later cut through by Montlake Cut), it is unloaded from the scows and loaded onto another tram, carted over Montlake Portage, reloaded onto barges at Lake Union, barged across Lake Union to the dock at south Lake Union, and from there, loaded onto the new railway, which carries it over Denny Hill (later flattened by regrades), roughly along the route of today's Westlake Avenue. The railway turns at Pike Street and carries the coal to coal bunkers at the end of that street. This little railway will operate until 1878, when the Seattle & Walla Walla Railroad will arrive at Newcastle and provide a more efficient route around the south end of Lake Washington through Renton and through downtown Seattle to Elliott Bay. [File 5412: Full Text >](#)

p. 256 – industrialization effect – immigrants/ need for more people

[Seattle, state of the city and environs in 1871.](#) By 1871, Seattle has become the distribution center of the central Puget Sound area and of the Yakima Valley. It supplies goods and services from Snohomish up the Duwamish Valley and west to the lumber mills at Port Blakely, Port Madison, Port Gamble, and Port Ludlow. Seattle has a wide range of businesses and services: boiler makers, bakeries, gristmills, tinsmiths, cigar manufacturers, wharf builders, jewelry makers, and sash and door factories, to mention a few. King County has a total of six post offices. [File 1610: Full Text >](#)

p. 256 – industrialization effect – increased demand for raw materials

[Settlers begin loading logs on the ship *Leonesa* in King County's first export on December 9, 1851.](#) On December 9, 1851, all seven adult male settlers at New York (renamed Alki) begin cutting down trees and loading lumber on the ship *Leonesa*, bound for San Francisco. This represents the future King County's first export and first significant logging. The seven men are Arthur Denny (1822-1899), David Denny (1832-1903), Lee Terry (1818-1862), Carson Boren (1824?-1912), William Bell (1817-1887), John Low (1820-1888), and Charles Terry (1829-1867). [File 742: Full Text >](#)

p. 256 – Northern Pacific Railroad

[Northern Pacific Railroad and Seattle Development](#) The Northern Pacific Railroad played a pivotal role in the development of railroads in Seattle and in the Puget Sound region. The company's decision to locate its Western terminus in Tacoma rather than in Seattle brought the city together to form its own railroad company, the Seattle &

Walla Walla. In the 1870s and 1880s, Seattle's relationship with Northern Pacific was fraught with highs and considerable lows. In the 1890s, however, the railroad's commitment to Seattle became clear when the company purchased small regional railroad interests and began contributing rails, stations, and services to the local infrastructure. [File 1734: Full Text >](#)

Northern Pacific Railroad's Orphan Road From 1884 until mid-1887, the Northern Pacific ran a train from Tacoma to Seattle. When the train began to operate on June 17, 1884, Seattleites were ecstatic. Henry Villard (1835-1900) had acquired the transcontinental railroad, and Seattle had hopes of becoming its terminus. But Villard quickly went bust, and pro-Tacoma, anti-Seattle interests acquired the Northern Pacific. The line between Tacoma and Seattle was called the Orphan Road because of its gross neglect and poor service. Not until 1887 did Seattle become the true terminus of the Northern Pacific's transcontinental route. [File 2286: Full Text >](#)

Northern Pacific Railroad reaches Hoquiam in 1899. In 1899, four years after the Northern Pacific reached Hoquiam's sister city of Aberdeen, it was extended into Hoquiam, thus completing the capitalist project begun a decade earlier. Although its earlier access to rail gave Aberdeen an early lead in population, capital, and prestige it would never relinquish, the railway brought a massive dose of new investment to Hoquiam, particularly by lumber capitalists [File 8765: Full Text >](#)

p. 256 – Great Northern Railroad

Great Northern and North Pacific railroads announce joint incorporation of the Portland & Seattle Railway Company on August 23, 1905. On August 23, 1905, the Great Northern and North Pacific railroads announce joint incorporation of the Portland & Seattle Railway Company. This links Spokane, Washington, and Portland, Oregon, and provides a straight and relatively level route over the Cascade Range. [File 927: Full Text >](#)

The Great Northern Railway Eight-Mile Tunnel is dedicated on January 12, 1929. On January 12, 1929, Great Northern Railway begins service through its newly constructed Eight-Mile Tunnel, running between Scenic (elevation 2,247 feet), on the west slope of the Cascade Mountains, and Berne (elevation 2,881 feet) on the east slope. The tunnel, bored through 7.8 miles of solid granite, is built in the record time of three years and costs \$14 million to complete. Now called the Cascade Tunnel, it is owned and operated by the Burlington Northern & Santa Fe Railway and remains the longest railroad tunnel in North America. [File 10705: Full Text >](#)

p. 256 – James J. Hill

Hill, James J. (1838-1916) James J. Hill, nicknamed the Empire Builder, embodied the archetypal American story of success, rising from poor dock clerk to multimillionaire railroad magnate. In time, Hill had gained control of the Great Northern, Northern Pacific, and the Burlington railroads. James J. Hill was perhaps more significant to the framing of the empire of the Pacific Northwest than any other individual. His decisions about rail routes and station stops had the power to turn fledging communities into robust cities -- and to cause other hopeful towns to die a bornin'. Settlers cultivated land along the margins of the tracks he laid, later shipping the products of their farms to distant markets via the trains. Hill's impact on the economic development of the Midwestern and Pacific Northwestern regions of the United States is difficult to overestimate. [File 8115: Full Text >](#)

p. 260-1 – Alaska-Yukon-Klondike Gold Rush

Gold in the Pacific Northwest The discovery of gold in California in 1848 sent would-be millionaires on a quest for treasure throughout the West. By 1900, major strikes had been made in Oregon, Idaho, Nevada, Alaska, and western Canada. Although prospectors found relatively little gold within the borders of what is now Washington

state, their very presence, as they rushed from one rumored bonanza to another, created new patterns of transportation, settlement, and commerce. Miners traveling to gold fields on tributaries of the upper Columbia River in the 1850s stimulated development along the lower Columbia. Walla Walla was the largest town in Washington in the 1860s and 1870s because of its position as a supply center for mines in north central and southern Idaho. Spokane boomed as a result of discoveries in northern Idaho in the 1880s. The Klondike Gold Rush of 1897 yanked Seattle out of a recession and transformed both the city's infrastructure and character. Gold rushes were defining events not only for the places where the gold was found, but for the places the miners passed through in search of gold. [File 7162: Full Text >](#)

Klondike Gold Rush On July 17, 1897, the steamship *Portland* arrived in Seattle from Alaska with 68 miners and a cargo of "more than a ton of solid gold" from the banks of the Klondike River in Canada's Yukon Territory. This set off a rush to Alaska and an era of prosperity in King County that lasted for more than a decade. [File 687: Full Text >](#)

p. 263 – **Alaska-Yukon-Pacific Exposition**

Alaska-Yukon-Pacific Exposition, 1909 -- A Slideshow of Seattle's First World's Fair This is a Slideshow on the Alaska-Yukon-Pacific Exposition, Washington's first World's Fair, which opened on June 1, 1909, and closed on October 16, 1909. More than three million people visited the fair, which took place in Seattle on the University of Washington campus. Written and Curated by Paul Dorpat, with Chris Goodman. Presented by Safeco. [File 7082: Full Text >](#)

p. 264 – **Chinese Exclusion Act**

Chinese Exclusion Repeal Act, aka the Magnuson Act, is signed on December 17, 1943. On December 17, 1943, the Chinese Exclusion Repeal Act of 1943 -- aka the Magnuson Act -- is signed into law, permitting Chinese immigration for the first time since the Chinese Exclusion Act of 1882. It also allows Chinese people already in the United States to become citizens for the first time since the Naturalization Act of 1790. Democratic U.S. Representative (later senator) Warren G. Magnuson (1905-1989) of Washington state submits the bill. Throughout his 36-year career in Congress, Magnuson will champion improved relations with China, regardless of the political party in power. [File 8993: Full Text >](#)

Filipino Americans in Seattle With an estimated population of 30,000 (in the late 1990s), the Filipino American community forms the largest group of Asian Americans in the Seattle area. Beginning with the first known Filipino resident in 1883, waves of Filipino immigrants arrived in dynamic relationship with the status of the Philippines (from colony to independence). They often faced discrimination and hardship, as described by the Filipino poet and writer Carlos Bulosan (1911?-1956). Filipinos have contributed to the area's arts, business, and political leadership. In 1979, Delores Sibonga (b. 1931) became the first member of the Seattle City Council of Filipino ancestry. President Bill Clinton appointed Bob Santos (b. 1934) as regional representative of the U.S. Department of Housing and Urban Development. In 1992, Velma Veloria won election to the Washington State Legislature from Seattle's 11th District, making her the highest ranking elected official of Filipino ancestry in the country at the time. [File 409: Full Text >](#)

Filipino Cannery Workers As early as the 1920s, Filipinos from Seattle were contracted to work in Alaskan canneries. Later efforts at reform of contracting practices led to assassinations of Filipino union organizers in the 1930s and 1980s. [File 411: Full Text >](#)

p. 264 – **Chinese immigrant communities**

Chinese Americans Chinese immigrants played a critical role in the development of Washington Territory and of Seattle. By 1880, more than 3,000 Chinese lived in Washington Territory and worked in various industries. [File 2060: Full Text >](#)

p. 264 – **Japanese immigrant communities**

Japanese Americans in Seattle and King County For more than a hundred years, Japanese Americans have made significant contributions to the commercial, cultural, and social history of Seattle and King County. Early immigrants arrived just before the turn of the century to work on railroads and in sawmills and canneries, eking out a living while enduring discrimination in immigration, employment, and housing. Others turned to farming, converting land covered with marshes and tree stumps into productive cropland. [File 231: Full Text >](#)

p. 264 – **Filipino immigrant communities**

Filipino Americans in Seattle With an estimated population of 30,000 (in the late 1990s), the Filipino American community forms the largest group of Asian Americans in the Seattle area. Beginning with the first known Filipino resident in 1883, waves of Filipino immigrants arrived in dynamic relationship with the status of the Philippines (from colony to independence). They often faced discrimination and hardship, as described by the Filipino poet and writer Carlos Bulosan (1911?-1956). Filipinos have contributed to the area's arts, business, and political leadership. In 1979, Delores Sibonga (b. 1931) became the first member of the Seattle City Council of Filipino ancestry. President Bill Clinton appointed Bob Santos (b. 1934) as regional representative of the U.S. Department of Housing and Urban Development. In 1992, Velma Veloria won election to the Washington State Legislature from Seattle's 11th District, making her the highest ranking elected official of Filipino ancestry in the country at the time. [File 409: Full Text >](#)

Filipino Cannery Workers As early as the 1920s, Filipinos from Seattle were contracted to work in Alaskan canneries. Later efforts at reform of contracting practices led to assassinations of Filipino union organizers in the 1930s and 1980s. [File 411: Full Text >](#)

p. 264 – **Buffalo soldiers stationed at Fort George Wright in Spokane**

Buffalo Soldiers are stationed at Fort Lawton beginning on October 5, 1909. On October 5, 1909, the 25th Infantry, one of the four African American regiments in the U.S. Army, arrives at Fort Lawton after a tour of duty in the Philippines. These African American soldiers were called Buffalo Soldiers by Plains Indians in the 1870s and 1880s. The regiment has the best non-professional baseball team in the country, as well as an outstanding band. [File 1054: Full Text >](#)

p. 264 – **immigrants from Europe**

Leif Erikson Lodge No. 1 (now 2-001) of the Grand Lodge of the Sons of Norway of the Pacific Coast holds first formal meeting on May 13, 1903. On May 13, 1903, Leif Erikson Lodge No. 1 (now 2-001) of the Grand Lodge of the Sons of Norway of the Pacific Coast holds its first meeting at Forester's Hall, 818 1st Avenue, in Seattle. It was the first of many lodges to be organized in the Grand Lodge of the Sons of Norway of the Pacific

Coast, which was also founded on May 13, 1903. The fraternity originally serves young men mostly under the age of 40 of Norwegian birth and descent (it has admitted women since 1927) with health benefits, life insurance, financial and social services, and recreational programs. [File 4165: Full Text >](#)

p. 266 – **working conditions**

p. 268 272 – **timber industry (economic activities)**

Longview -- Thumbnail History The city of Longview is located at the confluence of the Cowlitz and the Columbia rivers in western Cowlitz County, 66 miles upriver from the Pacific Ocean and 67 miles south of Olympia, the state capital. Financed by Kansas City timber baron Robert Alexander Long (1850-1934), president of Long-Bell Lumber Company, it was at the time the largest planned city ever to have been built entirely with private funds. Longview's principal function was to support a giant lumber mill that Long-Bell planned to construct on the 14,000-acre town site. Long did not want a squalid mill town to spontaneously develop there, so he conceived of a beautiful new industrial city, which was planned and built in the 1920s. Named after his farm in Lees Summit, Missouri, Longview was incorporated as a third-class city on February 14, 1924. Four months later Long-Bell Lumber Company started production in what was declared to be the largest lumber mill in the world. By 1930, Longview's population had grown to approximately 10,700 residents, far short of the 30,000 people the Long-Bell Company expected and the 50,000 residents the community was planned for. Today, manufacturing wood and paper products is still the city's main industry, employing more than 3,000 workers. According to the U.S. Census Bureau, in 2006 the city of Longview, the largest in Cowlitz County, had an estimated population of 35,710. [File 8560: Full Text >](#)

p. 268 – **Weyerhaeuser**

Weyerhaeuser Company Weyerhaeuser is the world's largest producer of lumber. The firm arrived in the Pacific Northwest when Frederick Weyerhaeuser (1834-1914) and his partners purchased 900,000 acres of forest land in Western Washington from the Northern Pacific Railroad Co. in 1900. [File 1675: Full Text >](#)

Weyerhaeuser Timber Company incorporates on January 18, 1900. On January 18, 1900, the Weyerhaeuser Timber Company incorporates. This occurs about two weeks after Frederick Weyerhaeuser (1834-1914) purchases some 900,000 acres (1,406 square miles) of Washington state timberlands from railroad magnate James J. Hill (1838-1916) in one of the largest land transactions in American history. The new timber company, headquartered in Tacoma, is the largest in the state. [File 7617: Full Text >](#)

Weyerhaeuser makes one of the largest land purchases in United States history on January 3, 1900. On January 3, 1900, railroad magnate James J. Hill (1838-1916) sells 900,000 acres (1,406 square miles) of Washington state timberlands to Frederick Weyerhaeuser (1834-1914) for \$5,400,000. This is "one of the largest single land transfers in American annals." Soon after the purchase, Weyerhaeuser forms the Weyerhaeuser Timber Company (incorporated on January 18, 1900), the largest timber firm in the state. [File 5241: Full Text >](#)

p. 268, 270-1 – **agricultural industry (economic activities)**

Japanese Farming Most early Japanese immigrants to the Pacific Northwest came to work in the labor-intensive industries of timber, railroad construction, fish processing, and agriculture. As they became more settled they started their own farms and eventually became prolific producers. [File 298: Full Text >](#)

p. 268 – **irrigation (Yakima, Wenatchee, Columbia River valleys)**

Irrigation in the Walla Walla River Valley Irrigation has been the single most crucial element in the Walla Walla Valley's agriculture since 1836, when pioneer missionary Marcus Whitman (1802-1847) dug the first irrigation ditch near his Walla Walla mission. The bottomlands of the Walla Walla and Touchet rivers proved to be uncommonly fertile when supplied with water flowing off the nearby Blue Mountains. Early settlers dug small ditches for their gardens, orchards and pastures. The first large-scale canal projects were launched in 1892 and 1893, including the Hawley Ditch and the Burlingame-Gardena Ditch, which transformed thousands of acres into lush farmland and orchards near Touchet. Other ditch projects soon followed the length of the Walla Walla Valley, including some across the border into Oregon. Artesian wells gushed fountains of groundwater. Irrigation made it possible to grow the crops that the Walla Walla Valley later became famous for: Walla Walla Sweets (onions) and wine grapes from the Walla Walla Valley American Viticultural Area. Many of the original irrigation ditches were converted to more efficient covered pipelines beginning in 2010, as part of a plan to leave more water in the Walla Walla River for fish. [File 10660: Full Text >](#)

The Burlingame Gardena irrigation ditch, a key irrigation project in the Walla Walla Valley, is completed on May 27, 1905. On May 27, 1905, the Burlingame Gardena irrigation ditch, a key irrigation project in the Walla Walla Valley, is completed. It is one of the biggest irrigation projects in the Walla Walla Valley and transports water in 21 miles of canals from the Walla Walla River to the Gardena area, just south of Touchet. Its guiding force and president is Edward C. Burlingame (1858-1958), who uses the water to irrigate his vast Burlingame Hilltop Ranch near the Oregon border. Other farms rapidly develop in the area. The canal system operates for many years under the name Walla Walla Irrigation Co. It becomes the Gardena Farms Irrigation District in 1928 and later Gardena Farms Irrigation District No. 13. [File 10661: Full Text >](#)

Grant, Adams, and Franklin counties begin celebrating the Columbia Basin Water Festival on May 22, 1952. Beginning on May 22, 1952, Grant, Adams, and Franklin counties celebrate the Columbia Basin Water Festival. The event celebrates the first irrigation water sent from the Grand Coulee Dam through canals to the Columbia Basin to irrigate 66,000 acres, the first of a projected million acres to be irrigated. To celebrate this first irrigation, three counties and 10 cities schedule a 10-day series of events. Adrian Awan is the main organizer. Sally Johnson of Soap Lake is voted queen of the festival. Phyllis Elaine Pfeifer Brown of Wilson Creek, Irene Snyder of Quincy, and Dolores Larreau of Moses Lake are her princesses. [File 8114: Full Text >](#)

First irrigation ditch in the Yakima Valley is dug at the Saint Joseph Mission in 1852. In 1852, Catholic Missionary Oblates of Mary Immaculate Father Charles Pandosy and Father Eugene Casmire Chirouse (1821-1892), in company with Yakama people, labor with shovels to dig the first irrigation ditch in the Yakima Valley. In time irrigation will so transform the natural sagebrush desert (an ecology known as shrub-steppe) that the Yakima Valley will become known as the fruit bowl of the nation. [File 5288: Full Text >](#)

Walter Granger organizes the Yakima Land and Canal Company on December 4, 1889. On December 4, 1889, Walter N. Granger (1855-1930) and a group of St. Paul, Minnesota, investors organize the Yakima Land and Canal Company. Walter Granger is named president. The company uses some of its capital stock of one million dollars divided into 200,000 shares to secure an option on all land in the Yakima Valley owned by the Northern Pacific Railroad. The company, renamed the Northern Pacific, Kittitas, and Yakima Irrigation Project, will create the Sunnyside Project, Yakima Valley's first commercial irrigation project. [File 7695: Full Text >](#)

May Day picnic celebrates first irrigation water reaching Sequim Prairie on May 1, 1896. On May 1, 1896, local farm families celebrate their completion of the first irrigation ditch carrying Dungeness River water to Sequim Prairie. Located in eastern Clallam County in the rain shadow of the Olympic Mountains, the fertile prairie receives less than 17 inches of rain a year. Dug by hand by local farmers who organized the Sequim Prairie Ditch Company in 1895, the ditch marks the beginning of the Sequim Irrigation District. Over the next quarter-century, some 20 ditch companies construct a maze of canals throughout the Dungeness Valley, eventually creating a 25,000-acre canal-sprinkler irrigation system, the largest in Western Washington. The Sequim Irrigation Festival

commemorating the opening of the first ditch has been held every year since 1896, making it the oldest continuing festival in the state. [File 7586: Full Text >](#)

Irrigated Agriculture Research and Extension Center, WSU Prosser Washington State College (later WSU) established the Irrigation Experiment Station at Prosser in 1919. The Washington Irrigation Institute recommended such a program to study problems faced by farmers, orchardists, and ranchers in the dry central part of the state. The station employed scientists from the college in Pullman, who partnered with scientists from the Washington State Department of Agriculture (WSDA) and the United States Department of Agriculture (USDA). The Irrigated Agriculture Research and Extension Center, as it is now known, continues to provide support and research for Washington state irrigated agriculture. Irrigated agriculture, including grapes for the wine industry, wheat, hops, alfalfa, and apple and cherry orchards, comprises some 60 crops that add up to two-thirds of the state's agriculture and bring in some \$3 billion in revenue annually. The center is one of the major employers of Prosser. [File 7684: Full Text >](#)

p. 269 – **mining industry (economic activities)**

Coal in the Puget Sound Region The history of coal in Puget Sound is tied to the development and expansion of the railroad in the West. Locomotives burned coal, and coal, which is heavy and bulky, could not be transported without the railroad. These two industries grew together in the region, the health of each enabling the growth of both. Washington coal, used to fuel locomotives and steamships, and to heat homes in the Pacific Northwest and elsewhere, found a major market in California. The largest mines were located in King County (Black Diamond, Franklin, and Renton), Pierce County (Carbonado), Kittitas County (Roslyn), and Lewis County (Centralia). In the nineteenth century coal was king, but increasingly in the twentieth century oil and natural gas were competitors. Across the country coal is widely used as a fuel to generate electricity, but in the Pacific Northwest, coal's fate was sealed by the move toward hydroelectric generation, although when hydroelectric dam construction largely ended in the 1960s, some utilities turned back to coal as one way to meet demand. In Washington state the last underground mine closed in 1975, and the last open pit mine, which operated at Centralia, closed in 2006. [File 5158: Full Text >](#)

p. 269 – **Roslyn mines (Cle Elum)**

Roslyn Mine disaster (October 3, 1909): The Official Investigative Report of the Washington State Inspector of Coal Mines This People's History presents the full official investigative report prepared by the state Inspector of Coal Mines after an explosion at the Roslyn Mine on October 3, 1909, claimed the lives of 10 miners. Another Roslyn mine had earlier been the scene of the state's worst mine disaster, an 1892 explosion and fire that killed 45 men. This report on the 1909 disaster was contributed by Bill Kombol, manager of Palmer Coking Coal Co. [File 9182: Full Text >](#)

Worst coalmine disaster in Washington history kills 45 miners at Roslyn on May 10, 1892. At 1:45 p.m. on Tuesday, May 10, 1892, an explosion and fire kill 45 miners in the Northern Pacific Coal Company's No. 1 mine at Roslyn, located in the eastern foothills of the Cascade Mountains in Central Washington. It will prove to be the worst coalmine disaster in Washington state history. [File 8016: Full Text >](#)

Explosion and fire kill 10 men in a Roslyn coal mine on October 3, 1909. On Sunday, October 3, 1909, an explosion and fire at the Northwestern Improvement Company's No. 4 mine in Roslyn kills 10 workers. A column of flame 100 to 400 feet high ignites the head frame, tippel, snow sheds, and other buildings. Typically 500 to 600 men work in the mine, but Sunday is a maintenance shift and fewer workers are on duty. Newly developed respirators on display at the Alaska-Yukon-Pacific Exposition in Seattle will be rushed to Roslyn to aid in recovery. [File 8021: Full Text >](#)

Roslyn -- Thumbnail History Roslyn, a town in Kittitas County on the east slope of the Cascades, was founded as a coal-mining town in 1886 when prospectors from the Northern Pacific railroad found rich veins of coal. Within weeks Roslyn became a bustling mining camp. It grew rapidly over the next two years. The town's early years were plagued with labor strife, fires and mining disasters, including the worst coal mine disaster in Washington history, in which 45 miners died. Roslyn grew into one of the most ethnically diverse towns in the state, with a large population of black miners (originally brought in as strikebreakers) and other immigrants from all over Europe. Roslyn's fortunes waxed and waned along with the coal industry. It was a bustling city of 3,126 in 1910, but soon went into decades of population decline. The last mines shut down in 1963. Roslyn became a tourist destination in the 1990s when the popular TV show "Northern Exposure" was filmed there. As of 2008, the population was estimated at 992; however, just outside city limits, a large new recreational-residential resort has grown up. [File 9239: Full Text >](#)

p. 269, 273 – **fishing industry/ canning industry (economic activities)**

Filipino Cannery Workers As early as the 1920s, Filipinos from Seattle were contracted to work in Alaskan canneries. Later efforts at reform of contracting practices led to assassinations of Filipino union organizers in the 1930s and 1980s. [File 411: Full Text >](#)

The first salmon cannery on the Columbia River opens at Eagle Cliff, Wahkiakum County, in 1866. In 1866, brothers William, George, and John Hume, along with Andrew Hapgood, begin operating a small cannery on a scow at Eagle Cliff in eastern Wahkiakum County near the Cowlitz County line in southwest Washington. The Eagle Cliff cannery marks the start of the salmon canning industry that will flourish along the lower Columbia River for the rest of the 1800s before declining in the twentieth century along with the river's once-massive salmon runs. [File 8036: Full Text >](#)

Automated salmon cleaning machine developed in Seattle in 1903. In 1903, Seattle inventor Edmund A. Smith (1878-1909) develops a machine that guts and cleans salmon for canning, 55 times faster than human workers. Most Northwest cannery workers are Chinese immigrants, and Smith, with "unselfconscious racism" in the words of historian Carlos Schwantes, calls his invention the Iron Chink. The innovation increases cannery profits, but forces thousands of people to find other forms of work. [File 2109: Full Text >](#)

Filipino Cannery Workers As early as the 1920s, Filipinos from Seattle were contracted to work in Alaskan canneries. Later efforts at reform of contracting practices led to assassinations of Filipino union organizers in the 1930s and 1980s. [File 411: Full Text >](#)

Filipino labor activists Gene Viernes and Silme Domingo are slain in Seattle on June 1, 1981. On June 1, 1981, Seattle-based Filipino American labor activists Gene Viernes (1951-1981) and Silme Domingo (1952-1981) of Local 37 of the International Longshoremen's and Warehousemen's Union are murdered near Pioneer Square in downtown Seattle. They were attempting to reform the union, which they thought was corrupt, and were calling for better working conditions in the canneries. [File 412: Full Text >](#)

Seattle's Fishermen's Terminal is dedicated on January 10, 1914. On January 10, 1914, the Port of Seattle's new fishing fleet dock on Salmon Bay is dedicated in an elaborate celebration featuring band performances, singing, lunch, speeches, and a parade of fishing boats. The facility, which will soon become known as Fishermen's Terminal, is one of the first projects for the Port, which was formed less than three years earlier. The Port developed the new, central home for the region's scattered fishing fleet at the request of the Puget Sound Purse Seine Fishermen's Association, who sought adequate storage and repair facilities at reasonable rates. When dedicated, the terminal includes more than 1,800 feet of moorage accommodating 100 boats, a two-story warehouse for nets and equipment, storage ways, and a marine railway. It will expand over the years, becoming home to the North Pacific

Fishing Fleet and a key component of the commercial fishing industry that, even after declines, continues in 2012 to be an important part of the regional economy. [File 10020: Full Text >](#)

p. 269 – **manufacturing industry (economic activities)**

p. 269 – **shipbuilding industry (economic activities)**

Hall Brothers Shipyard breaks ground in Madrone (renamed Winslow) on Eagle Harbor on Bainbridge Island on July 6, 1902. On July 6, 1902, the Hall Brothers Shipyard breaks ground for its new location in Madrone (renamed Winslow) on Eagle Harbor on Bainbridge Island. Upon moving there in May 1903, the shipyard will become the town's first large-scale industry. At the turn of the century the Hall Brothers Marine Railway and Shipbuilding Company (its formal name) was outgrowing its site at Port Blakely, which had steep hills ending at the beach. Shipyard owner Henry Hall (his brothers Isaac and Winslow had died) looked to Eagle Harbor for more room and secured 77 acres in Madrone. The town's name becomes Winslow, in honor of Winslow Hall, either because, as historian Edmond Meany asserts, Henry Hall renamed the town, or because the town renamed itself to encourage the shipyard to relocate there. [File 8276: Full Text >](#)

Skinner & Eddy Shipyard begins ship construction in Seattle on February 3, 1916. On February 3, 1916, Skinner & Eddy Shipyard starts constructing ships. During World War I, the firm builds 75 vessels, becoming the largest shipyard in Seattle. The shipyard is located south of Seattle's Pioneer Square in the area known in the twenty-first century as SODO. [File 749: Full Text >](#)

Aberdeen shipyard sets new record in shipbuilding on September 9, 1918. On September 9, 1918, Grays Harbor Motorship Corporation in Aberdeen lays the keel for a new transport ship to meet the demands of the war effort. A mere 17 1/2 days later the Wonder Ship, as federal inspectors called her, is completed, establishing a new world record in ship construction. [File 7383: Full Text >](#)

p. 269 – **PACCAR**

PACCAR Inc PACCAR Inc is an international truck manufacturing firm based in the Pacific Northwest, best known for heavy-duty trucks sold under the names Kenworth, Peterbilt, DAF, and Foden. The firm also manufactures light- and medium-duty trucks, and parts and winches, and has been known as a technology innovator from the beginning (in Seattle, 1905) as a manufacturer of steel and of log-transport equipment. PACCAR, with headquarters in Bellevue, is the legacy of William Pigott (1860-1929) and his descendants. From its earliest days as Seattle Car and Foundry, this company has contributed significantly to employment and civic life throughout the Puget Sound region. The company's presence has been especially strong in Renton, where it remains the oldest continually operating business. [File 4272: Full Text >](#)

p. 269 – **Boeing Air Company**

Boeing and Early Aviation in Seattle, 1909-1919 Seattle residents saw their first flying machine on June 27, 1908, a balloon flown by L. Guy Mecklem (1882-1973) from West Seattle's Luna Park, and saw another flying machine, a dirigible, in 1909 during the Alaska-Yukon-Pacific Exposition. Charles Hamilton demonstrated the city's first airplane the following year. Herb Munter (1897-1970), a self-educated engineer, was building his own aircraft on Harbor Island by 1915. His efforts attracted the interest of William E. Boeing (1881-1956) and Navy Lt. Conrad Westervelt, who hired Munter to help them build their first airplane, the B&W, in 1916. America's entry into World

War I in 1917 lifted the new Boeing Airplane Co. to dizzying heights. Peace two years later sent it into a near-fatal nose dive. [File 5369: Full Text >](#)

p. 272 – **Yacolt Fire (1902)**

Yacolt Burn, largest forest fire in recorded state history, rages from September 11 to 13, 1902. From September 11 to 13, 1902, the Yacolt Burn, the largest forest fire in recorded Washington state history, destroys 238,920 acres -- more than 370 square miles -- and kills 38 people in Clark, Cowlitz, and Skamania counties. The fire is fanned by unusual dry winds from the east and travels 36 miles in 36 hours. There is no organized effort to stop the conflagration which consumes \$30 million in timber -- more than \$600 million in 2001 dollars. As many as 80 other fires around the state that summer consume more than 400,000 acres of timber. The Yacolt Burn is finally extinguished by rain. [File 5196: Full Text >](#)

p. 274 – **working class conditions/wages/unions**

Beck, Dave (1894-1993), Labor Leader Dave Beck was a key leader of the Teamster's Union on the West Coast for some 40 years, from the late 1920s to the early 1960s. He moved to Seattle at age 4 and began his career as a child delivering newspapers and later driving a laundry truck. In the 1920s, he became a full-time organizer for the Teamsters in the Pacific Northwest and British Columbia and by the 1930s led the region's Teamsters. His support of the Newspaper Guild strike of 1936 (against the Hearst-owned *Seattle Post-Intelligencer* and other papers) was a major cause of its victory. As president of the Teamsters, Beck held to a business-union philosophy, opposed radicals and union democracy, and was thus favored by conservative elements in the community such as the Chambers of Commerce. He ended his career in a corruption scandal (concerning the use of union funds) for which he served a two year (1962-1964) prison sentence on McNeil Island. After prison he retired to private (and a moderate public) life. [File 2972: Full Text >](#)

Boeing Machinists Strike, 1948 On April 22, 1948, the Aeronautical Machinists Union, IAM District Lodge 751, struck the Boeing Company. William Allen was then president of Boeing. For the Machinists the issues were preserving longstanding seniority rules that the company wanted to scrap, and achieving a 10 cent per hour raise for all categories of labor. The strike was characterized by the unusual occurrence of another union, Dave Beck's Teamsters, collaborating with the company to defeat the machinists union. On September 13, 1948, the Machinists returned to work without a victory, but in the subsequent NLRB-supervised election they soundly defeated the Teamsters. [File 2283: Full Text >](#)

Everett Massacre (1916) The Everett Massacre of Sunday, November 5, 1916, has been called the bloodiest labor confrontation in Northwest history. On that day a group of Industrial Workers of the World (IWW), also known as Wobblies, traveled from Seattle to Everett aboard the steamers *Verona* and *Calista*, intending to speak at the corner of Hewitt and Wetmore avenues in support of a strike by local shingle-weavers. A group of citizen-deputies under the authority of Snohomish County Sheriff Donald McRae (b. 1868) refused to let them land. A shot was fired, followed by several minutes of gunfire that killed at least five Wobblies and two deputies. The ships returned to Seattle, where 74 IWW members were arrested and taken back to the Snohomish County jail. Teamster Thomas H. Tracy was first to be tried, for the murder of Jefferson Beard. In the dramatic trial that followed, held in Seattle, Tracy was acquitted and the other Wobblies were released. [File 9981: Full Text >](#)

Coal miners at Ravensdale form a branch of the United Mine Workers of America in November 1903. In November 1903, about 100 coal miners at the Ravensdale coal mines form a union, a branch of the United Mine

Workers of America. In 1903 the miners are working 10 hours per day, six days per week (60 hours per week). [File 1074: Full Text >](#)

IWW formally begins Spokane free-speech fight on November 2, 1909. On November 2, 1909, the Industrial Workers of the World (IWW or Wobblies) formally begins the Spokane free-speech fight. This is a civil disobedience action mounted in public defiance of a Spokane City Council ordinance banning speaking on the streets, an ordinance directed against IWW organizing. On this day, one by one, IWW members mount a soapbox (an overturned crate) and begin speaking, upon which Spokane police yank them off the box and take them to jail. On the first day, 103 Wobblies are arrested, beaten, and incarcerated. Within a month, arrests will mount to 500, including the fiery young Wobbly orator Elizabeth Gurley Flynn (1890-1964). The Spokane free-speech fight will end with the City revoking the ordinance. It will inaugurate free-speech fights in other cities, and is considered one of the most significant battles to protect freedom of speech in American history. [File 7357: Full Text >](#)

Laundry workers strike all Everett plants on May 23, 1910. On May 23, 1910, a Monday morning, members of the Shirt Waist and Laundry Workers Union No. 154 in Everett walk off the job. Strikers represent all laundry plants in the city. The dispute is over wages, which have remained the same for two years. Laundry owners hope to break the strike by using scab labor but are halted in their efforts when laundry drivers, not in negotiation, support the strike. Laundresses are prepared for a long strike, but a settlement is made in six days. [File 8316: Full Text >](#)

Stone & Webster lock out 300 Renton coal miners during June 1912. During June 1912, Stone & Webster, owners of the Renton mines, lock out 300 Renton miners shortly after they form a union. [File 1096: Full Text >](#)

Teamsters strike 13 Seattle firms on June 16, 1913. On June 16, 1913, 225 teamsters strike 13 Seattle firms. The Seattle Teamsters Union strikes for union recognition and for better wages and working conditions. [File 1100: Full Text >](#)

Shingle weavers in Seattle form a union on January 1, 1899. On January 1, 1899, Seattle shingle weavers form a union. [File 1089: Full Text >](#)

Shingle weavers in Seattle and Ballard organize in May 1905. In May 1905, 50 shingle weavers of Seattle and Ballard form Local 12 of the International Shingle Weavers Union of America. Shingle weavers are sawmill workers who cut shingles. [File 1077: Full Text >](#)

Shingle weavers strike Ballard shingle mills on April 1, 1906. On April 1, 1906, the Ballard shingle weavers union strike all but two Ballard shingle mills. The strike is called to bring the wage scale at the Ballard mills in conformity with the wage scale at other mills in the state. [File 1094: Full Text >](#)

Shingle weavers strike 12 Ballard shingle mills on April 7, 1913. On April 7, 1913, 350 shingle weavers, sawmill workers who cut shingles, strike 12 Ballard mills for an increase in wages to attain wages equal to those paid in Everett, Bellingham, and other Western Washington towns. The strikers are members of the Shingle Weavers' Union Local No. 12. Ballard, which had annexed to Seattle in 1907, was a major center of shingle manufacturing. [File 1098: Full Text >](#)

p. 274 – **American Federation of Labor (AFL)**

American Federation of Labor (AFL) 33rd annual convention meets in Seattle beginning November 10, 1913. On November 10, 1913, the 33rd annual convention of the American Federation of Labor (AFL) opens in Seattle, Washington. The opening ceremonies and speeches are attended by nearly 3,000 people at the Hippodrome on 5th Avenue and University Street. Speakers include Washington Governor Ernest Lister (1870-1919), Seattle Mayor

George Cotterill (1865-1958), Washington State Federation of Labor President E. P. Marsh of Everett, and AFL President Samuel Gompers (1850-1924). Among the many issues the convention deals with are immigration, machine labor versus hand labor, and the organization of women workers. [File 2892: Full Text >](#)

p. 274 – **Congress of Industrial Organization (CIO)**

p. 274 – **International Workers of the World (IWW)**

Industrial Workers of the World (IWW) The Industrial Workers of the World, or IWW, was founded in 1905 in Chicago, and by 1908 had become influential among migrant laborers in the Pacific Northwest. Members were dubbed "Wobblies" and soon earned a reputation for loud singing, radicalism, and militancy. IWW members and organizers played an active role in Northwest metal mining (in Idaho), logging, and agriculture. In 1909 the IWW Spokane free-speech fight was an early and legendary example of direct action in support of constitutional rights. The massive statewide lumber strike in the summer of 1917 brought the industry to a halt at the beginning of World War I. The union's bloody clashes with authorities in Everett (1916) and Centralia (1919) became the stuff of legend. IWW membership and influence declined sharply after the anti-radical purges of the World War I era, but the union never quite died off. Young IWW members made a dramatic reappearance in Seattle during protests around the World Trade Organization conference in late 1999. [File 2016: Full Text >](#)

p. 275 – **Railroad Strike of Ellensburg (organized labor)**

p. 275 – **Washington State Federation of Labor**

p. 277 – **women and the vote**

Woman Suffrage Crusade, 1848-1920 Washington women won the vote in 1883, then lost it in 1888. They reclaimed the right to vote in 1910, breaking a 14-year gridlock in the national crusade for woman suffrage and making Washington state the fifth in the nation where women could vote. Local suffragists supported the national crusade until the 1920 ratification of the 19th Amendment to the U.S. Constitution. [File 5662: Full Text >](#)

Arthur Denny proposes white-woman suffrage amendment in the Territorial Legislature's first session on February 28, 1854. In 1854, Arthur Denny (1822-1899), one of the founders of Seattle, proposes an amendment at the first session of the territorial legislature "to allow all white females over the age of 18 years to vote." It is defeated by a single vote. Lawmakers make a small concession, granting every taxpaying inhabitant over 21 years of age the right to vote in school elections. [File 5211: Full Text >](#)

Susan B. Anthony helps found Washington Woman Suffrage Association on October 1, 1871. In October 1871, Susan B. Anthony (1820-1906), national women's rights leader and vice president of the National Woman Suffrage Association, becomes the first woman to address the Washington Territorial Legislature. She and Oregon suffragist Abigail Scott Duniway (1834-1915) tour Washington Territory to promote the cause of woman suffrage (the right of women to vote). They help organize the Washington Equal Suffrage Association. [File 5557: Full Text >](#)

Clara McCarty is elected superintendent of Pierce County schools on November 2, 1880. On November 2, 1880, Clara McCarty (1858-1929) is elected superintendent of Pierce County schools. McCarty, age 20, is the first woman in Pierce County to win elective office. She was also (in 1876) the first college graduate of the University of Washington. McCarty wins this election three years before women in Washington Territory first obtain the right to vote. (Women win and lose the right to vote several times before 1910, when Washington state becomes the fifth state in the nation to enfranchise women.) [File 5061: Full Text >](#)

Washington women win and lose the vote between 1883 and 1888. In 1883, Washington women win the vote. In the next election they tip the balance for law and order, closing down saloons and brothels in local communities, including Seattle. Legal challenges follow. One emotional argument holds that women who serve on juries are being exposed to "sordid facts of life." In the conventional opinion of the time, women were too delicate and pure to know such facts. [File 5215: Full Text >](#)

Woman suffrage is declared unconstitutional in *Harland v. Washington* on February 3, 1887. On February 3, 1887, the Washington territorial supreme court declares the suffrage act of 1883 unconstitutional in a case brought by a swindler convicted by a Grand Jury that included women. His appeal claimed that women were not legal jurors. [File 464: Full Text >](#)

Washington territory re-enacts woman suffrage law to exclude women from juries on January 16, 1888. On January 16, 1888, the Washington territorial legislature re-enacts the woman suffrage law. Women regain the vote but are no longer permitted to serve on juries. [File 465: Full Text >](#)

Woman suffrage in Washington Territory declared unconstitutional in Nevada Bloomer case on August 14, 1888. On August 14, 1888, the Washington territorial Supreme Court rules the woman suffrage law unconstitutional. The court hears the trumped-up case of Nevada Bloomer, a Spokane saloonkeeper's wife. (The liquor interests tended to oppose woman suffrage because women voters tended to oppose the liquor interests.) [File 5216: Full Text >](#)

Washington State Constitutional Convention delegates frame constitution stipulating that voters must be male, but append separate woman suffrage and Prohibition amendments on August 17, 1889. On August 17, 1889, delegates to the Washington State Constitutional Convention in Olympia tack two amendments, one for woman suffrage and the other for Prohibition, onto the ballot by which voters will decide whether or not to ratify their new state constitution. The ballot also asks voters to decide which city should be the new state's capital. [File 5503: Full Text >](#)

Women win school suffrage on March 27, 1890. On March 27, 1890, Governor Elisha P. Ferry signs the School Suffrage Act into law. The act enfranchises women to vote in local school district elections, but not for state or county superintendents. [File 469: Full Text >](#)

Carrie Chapman Catt becomes president of the National American Woman Suffrage Association in 1900. In 1900, Susan B. Anthony (1820-1906) selects Carrie Chapman Catt (1859-1947) to succeed her as president of the National American Woman Suffrage Association (NAWSA). Catt had previously lived in Seattle, where she served as founding president of the Woman's Century Club in 1891. [File 470: Full Text >](#)

Emma Smith DeVoe is elected president of the Washington Equal Suffrage Association in 1906. In 1906, Emma Smith DeVoe (1848-1927) is elected president of the Washington Equal Suffrage Association. At the time of her election the organization is flagging badly, with exactly two members. Upon her election, membership jumps to 2,000. It is partly through her work that in 1910 the women's national suffrage caucus is held in Washington state, and Washington men vote in favor of women's suffrage, making Washington the fifth state in the nation to give women the right to vote. [File 2621: Full Text >](#)

The Washington Equal Suffrage Association hosts the third evening meeting of the National American Woman Suffrage Association convention at Seattle's Plymouth Congregational Church on July 3, 1909. On July 3, 1909, members of the Washington Equal Suffrage Association host the third evening meeting of the National American Woman Suffrage Association convention at Plymouth Congregational Church in Seattle. The convention is taking place during Washington's first world's fair, the Alaska-Yukon-Pacific (A-Y-P) Exposition, held on the

University of Washington campus. The confluence of the widely publicized convention and the world's fair will help win supporters for women's right to vote. [File 8586: Full Text >](#)

League of Women Voters The League of Women Voters, a non-partisan organization founded in 1920 and concerned with public policy and citizenship issues, grew out of the National American Woman Suffrage Association (NAWSA). Under the leadership of President Carrie Chapman Catt (1859-1947), the NAWSA transformed itself into the League of Women Voters after the suffrage organization had won the victory of the 19th Amendment to the U.S. Constitution, which granted women their right to vote. [File 3593: Full Text >](#)

DeVoe, Emma Smith (1848-1927) Emma Smith DeVoe was a major figure in the American woman suffrage movement and a Republican Party activist. Although she spent the bulk of her political life in Washington state, she was also a paid suffrage worker on the national level, helping to bring about woman suffrage in Washington in 1910, and the Nineteenth Amendment granting the vote to all American women in 1920. The guiding principle of her campaigns was: "Always be good-natured and cheerful" (Ross-Nazzari, "Emma Smith DeVoe," 76). Her efforts in Washington state were both effective and controversial. The 1909 conventions in Seattle of the Washington Equal Suffrage Association (WESA), of which she was president, and the National American Woman Suffrage Association (NAWSA), for which she was a paid organizer, brought to a head the controversies with the Eastern Washington clubs led by Spokane's May Arkwright Hutton (1860-1915). Despite what some considered DeVoe's heavy-handed leadership style, her overall contribution to the suffrage movement was extraordinary. After ratification of the Nineteenth Amendment, DeVoe entered Republican Party politics, eventually rising to leadership positions on the state and national levels. [File 7588: Full Text >](#)

Hutton, May Arkwright (1860-1915) May Arkwright Hutton is probably the best-known woman's name in Spokane history. The woman suffrage leader and political activist grew up in Ohio and came west to the Coeur d'Alene mining area as a young woman. First as a saloon cook, then a boarding house owner, she became known as the best cook in the Coeur d'Alenes. There she met locomotive engineer, Levi W. Hutton (1860-1928), whom she married in 1887. Theirs was a classic American rags to riches story. The Huttons and their partners owned the Hercules Mine, which eventually produced enough silver and lead to make them millionaires. In 1906 they moved to Spokane, where Levi diversified into real estate and May became a philanthropist, the prime mover in Eastern Washington's woman suffrage movement, and an active figure in Democratic Party politics. [File 7547: Full Text >](#)

Washington State Conference for Women opens in Ellensburg on July 8, 1977. On July 8, 1977, the Washington State Conference for Women opens in Ellensburg. The three-day conference, designed to promote gender equality, will be marked by polarizing debates over the role and rights of women and girls in American society. Women with deeply held but divergent points of view line up on opposite sides of contentious issues such as abortion, gay rights, and the proposed Equal Rights Amendment (ERA) to the Constitution. One session of voting ends with the defeat of a resolution supporting the ERA; another results in the election of a pro-ERA slate of delegates to a national women's conference to be held in Houston, Texas, four months later. The split reflects the power struggle that made Ellensburg a battleground in what one observer will call "a spiritual war" (Dottie Roberts interview). [File 10259: Full Text >](#)

p. 277 – **eight-hour work day**

Alice Lord sparks Seattle waitresses to organize on March 23, 1900. On March 23, 1900, Alice Lord (1877-1940), a 23-year-old waitress, sparks the organization of Seattle Waitresses Union, Local 240 (now Dining Employees Local No. 2). They have 65 founding members and become one of the first women's unions to be chartered by the American Federation of Labor. [File 3725: Full Text >](#)

Washington State Senate approves an eight-hour workday for women on March 2, 1911. On March 2, 1911, throughout the day's session, Washington State senators consider House Bill 12/Senate Bill 74, limiting women's employment to eight hours a day. The bill gains Senate approval, but only with an exclusion of fishery and cannery workers. [File 8315: Full Text >](#)

Lord, Alice (1877-1940) Alice Lord sparked organization of the Seattle Waitresses Union, Local 240 (in 1909, Dining Employees Local #2) in March 1900, and orchestrated the union's successful campaigns to promote pioneering wage and hour laws for working women. While helping organize other women workers, she was active in the Seattle Central Labor Council and the Washington State Federation of Labor. [File 865: Full Text >](#)

p. 277 – prohibition

Prohibition in Washington State In Washington -- as in the rest of the country -- the question of who, if anyone, should control, manufacture, import, possess, and consume alcoholic intoxicants has been contentious and complicated by other social issues such as race, religion, education, and gender. The issue of alcohol control influenced territorial and state politics and elections on the county and town level, especially with regard to individual community decisions to incorporate and thus gain control local of liquor laws. And just as saloons were important centers of activity for those who imbibed alcohol, groups devoted to temperance and anti-liquor agitation were social centers for many citizens who did not. Washington was among the 33 of the existing 48 states that had already adopted Prohibition laws at the state level before the 18th Amendment to the United States Constitution, the Prohibition amendment, was ratified in 1919. [File 9630: Full Text >](#)

Cigarette Prohibition in Washington, 1893-1911 The first Washington state elected official to make national history in a crusade against cigarettes was not Attorney General Christine Gregoire, who brokered a settlement between the tobacco industry and 46 states in 1998, or Metropolitan King County Council Member Greg Nickels, who led a campaign to restrict cigarette advertising that same year. The distinction belongs to C.T. Roscoe, an Everett attorney and Republican state legislator who sponsored the law that made Washington the first state to ban the sale of cigarettes to anyone, adults as well as minors. The year was 1893. [File 5339: Full Text >](#)

The Seattle Times tells the tale of an attempt to smuggle liquor into the United States on a circus train on August 4, 1933. On August 4, 1933, The Seattle Times publishes a humorous article written by reporter Doug Welch (1907-1968) about an attempt to smuggle liquor from Canada into the United States at Blaine on a circus train. There are any number of creative and entertaining stories about smuggling liquor during Prohibition (in effect from 1916 until 1933 in Washington state), and this essay talks about three of them, including Welch's story. [File 10002: Full Text >](#)

p. 279 – Abigail Scott Duniway

Duniway, Abigail Scott (1834-1915) Oregon suffragist Abigail Jane Scott Duniway was a nationally known pioneer leader for women's suffrage who worked regionally in what became the states of Oregon, Washington, and Idaho. Born on an Illinois farm, she traveled the Oregon Trail with her family in 1853 and when married, experienced the hard life as a rancher's wife. The mother of six children, Duniway was a persuasive speaker and prolific writer, authoring 22 novels that she serialized in the newspaper she founded and edited, the *New Northwest*, begun in 1871. That year Duniway convinced Susan B. Anthony to accompany her on a 2,400-mile speaking and organizing tour through Oregon and Washington. The two later helped establish the Washington Equal Suffrage Association (WESA). Duniway advocated persuasion and non-confrontational tactics to further the cause of women's suffrage. She was an important figure in the passage of Idaho's women suffrage bill in 1896 and a

supportive voice for Washington state's win in 1910. But she struggled in her own state of Oregon, where victory did not come until 1912, following five ballot defeats. In her autobiography *Pathbreaking*, published in 1914, Duniway tells the story of her 40 years of service in the struggle for women's rights. She died in Portland, Oregon in 1915 at the age of 81. [File 8720: Full Text >](#)

p. 279 – **League of Women’s Voters in Snohomish County**

Woman Suffrage Campaign -- Snohomish County (1909-1910) Grassroots organizing was critical to the 1910 campaign for Washington women's suffrage and Snohomish County played an important part in the event. Most prominent was journalist Missouri Hanna (1856-1926), often called "Mrs. M. T. B. Hanna" of Edmonds, who from 1909 to 1911 edited *Votes for Women*, the official newspaper of the Washington Equal Suffrage Association. Snohomish County suffrage workers effectively utilized the support of two groups, organized labor and the Grange, to help deliver the 2 to 1 state victory that gave Washington women the vote on November 8, 1910. Also important to the campaign was Ida Noyes McIntyre, M.D., an important figure in Everett who set up a medical clinic in 1901 and began applying lessons learned from the successful Colorado women's suffrage amendment, a state in which she had been voting for several years. [File 8690: Full Text >](#)

Emma Smith DeVoe promotes women's suffrage to teachers in Snohomish on September 2, 1909. On September 2, 1909, women's suffrage leader Emma Smith DeVoe (1848-1927) addresses a crowd of 400 teachers at the Snohomish County Institute in Snohomish on the topic of votes for women. Teachers express interest in taking up the cause. [File 8761: Full Text >](#)

p. 279 – **woman suffrage at A-Y-P**

Alaska-Yukon-Pacific Exposition (1909): Woman Suffrage During the first week of July 1909, suffrage proponents from across the country gathered in Seattle to participate in the 41st Annual Convention of the National American Woman Suffrage Association and to celebrate Woman Suffrage Day at Washington's first world's fair, the Alaska-Yukon-Pacific (A-Y-P) Exposition, currently underway on the University of Washington campus. The Washington Equal Suffrage Association convention, held the day before the National convention, drew suffragists from around the state. The suffragists, their conventions, and their appearances in area clubs and churches received copious coverage in local newspapers and captured the attention of thousands of Washingtonians attending the A-Y-P Exposition. Suffragists used the A-Y-P as a massive public relations opportunity and this exposure was an important component in how Washington women achieved the vote on November 8, 1910. [File 8587: Full Text >](#)

p. 280 – **onset of World War I**

World War I in Washington State The U.S. entry into World War I, at the time called the World War or the Great War, proved a boon economically to Washington, but cost the state in lives and in the loss of civil liberties. The Great War in Europe began in August 1914, with Germany, Austro-Hungary, Bulgaria, and the Ottoman Empire (Central Powers) lined up against Great Britain and its empire, France, Russia, Italy, and other countries (Allies). Most of the conflict raged in France and in Western Russia, with other campaigns in the Middle East, and in the Austrian and Italian Alps. The United States entered the war by declared war on Germany on April 6, 1917. The war ended on November 11, 1918, when Germany surrendered. [File 5732: Full Text >](#)

Knitting for Victory -- World War I During World War I Americans of all ages were asked by the United States government to knit wool socks, sweaters, and other garments to warm American soldiers at home and abroad. Most of this knitting was produced by volunteers working under the auspices of the American Red Cross. During the

course of the war more than 6,000 Seattle-area knitters as well as knitters from other parts of the state produced hundreds of thousands of knitted items for the war effort. The United States declared war on Germany on April 6, 1917. Germany surrendered and the war was over on November 11, 1918. [File 5721: Full Text >](#)

Wild West Division: Washington in World War I Washington men and women served with distinction in France during the First World War. The main land fighting force from Washington was the 361st Infantry Regiment of the 91st Division. This regiment was made up of 4,700 mostly drafted men from Washington and Oregon. The 91st Division, nicknamed the Wild West Division, was organized in 1917. After training at Camp Lewis in Pierce County, the division had its first combat in the Meuse-Argonne campaign in France in the fall of 1918, where it fought gallantly in the battle that has been called the crucial victory of the war, effectively ending German resistance. Due to its combat effectiveness, the 361st Regiment became known as the "pride of the Northwest." The 91st Division as a whole spent 26 days in combat; 1,454 men from the division were killed in action or died of wounds. Colonel William D. Davis (1869-1918), commander of the 361st Regiment, was the highest-ranking officer of the division to be killed in the war. In April 1919 the 361st was demobilized at Camp Lewis and one month later the division demobilized. [File 10648: Full Text >](#)

p. 281 – **William Boeing**

Boeing, William Edward (1881-1956) William Edward Boeing started his professional life as a lumberman and ended as a real-estate developer and horse breeder, but in between he founded the company that brought forth important breakthroughs in the field of aviation technology and the airline business. The Boeing Airplane Company became one of the signature corporations of Seattle and the Pacific Northwest and dominated the regional economy for most of the twentieth century. [File 8023: Full Text >](#)

p. 281 – **Boeing Red Barn**

p. 282 – **Everett Massacre**

Everett Massacre (1916) The Everett Massacre of Sunday, November 5, 1916, has been called the bloodiest labor confrontation in Northwest history. On that day a group of Industrial Workers of the World (IWW), also known as Wobblies, traveled from Seattle to Everett aboard the steamers *Verona* and *Calista*, intending to speak at the corner of Hewitt and Wetmore avenues in support of a strike by local shingle-weavers. A group of citizen-deputies under the authority of Snohomish County Sheriff Donald McRae (b. 1868) refused to let them land. A shot was fired, followed by several minutes of gunfire that killed at least five Wobblies and two deputies. The ships returned to Seattle, where 74 IWW members were arrested and taken back to the Snohomish County jail. Teamster Thomas H. Tracy was first to be tried, for the murder of Jefferson Beard. In the dramatic trial that followed, held in Seattle, Tracy was acquitted and the other Wobblies were released. [File 9981: Full Text >](#)

Citizen deputies beat 41 IWW members at Everett's Beverly Park on October 30, 1916. On October 30, 1916, citizen deputies beat 41 members of the militant labor union, the Industrial Workers of the World (IWW), at Beverly Park in Everett. Everett city officials have granted authority to Snohomish County Deputy Sheriff Donald McRae (b. 1868) to restrict the IWW from speaking on Everett's traditional free-speech corner at Hewitt and Wetmore avenues, an attempt to prevent the IWW from organizing. For their part, on that day 41 members of the IWW, most straight from the harvest fields, leave Seattle by boat and head for Everett in support of an Everett shingle-mill-workers' strike (organized not by the IWW but by an AFL union) and with the intent of pressing the free-speech issue. They

arrive in the evening and are met by more than 200 armed deputies who tell them they can only speak at a location away from the center of town. The IWW members refuse, and some are beaten at the dock. Deputies then load them into waiting trucks and cars, drive them to a remote wooded area near the Beverly Park interurban station southeast of town, and brutally beat them. [File 7887: Full Text >](#)

p. 283 – **lumber strike of 1917**

Spokane-based Lumber Workers Industrial Union, IWW, formally begins what will become a statewide loggers' strike on June 20, 1917. On June 20, 1917, the Spokane-based Lumber Workers Industrial Union No. 500, IWW, formally begins what will become a massive loggers' strike. The radical union calls the strike in the midst of an epidemic of small, spontaneous strikes throughout the "short-log" region (the pine log region east of the Cascades). Within two weeks logging operations within this region will cease. In another two weeks, the strike, which demands the eight-hour day and improved conditions in logging camps, will spread to Western Washington. Logging and the sawmills they supply will come to a halt. In August, in the context of World War I and the urgent need for lumber, Washington Governor Ernest Lister and the U.S. Secretary of War will persuade some logging firms to provide the eight-hour day. IWW leaders will be jailed, and by late August most loggers will return to work. [File 7342: Full Text >](#)

Spokane IWW office is raided, leaders are arrested, and martial law is declared on August 19, 1917. On August 19, 1917, the Spokane office of the IWW (Industrial Workers of the World, or Wobblies) is raided, leaders are arrested, and martial law is declared. The military authority is the National Guard, controlled by the U.S. War Department. This occurs in reaction to a demand by IWW leader James Rowan that all prisoners of the "class war" (he means Wobbly strikers and strike leaders involved in a statewide lumber strike) be released or Spokane would face a general strike. The repression of the democratic, radical union in Spokane and across the state takes place in the context of the ongoing, Wobbly-led loggers' and sawmill workers' strike for the eight-hour day and sanitary conditions in the camps. The IWW is militant, radical, and consistently and vocally nonviolent. The larger context of the repression of the union is war hysteria, combined with employer opposition to union demands. The nationwide suppression of the IWW during the war will include physical violence, vandalism, and the imprisonment of hundreds of union members and leaders. [File 7363: Full Text >](#)

p. 283 – **Spruce Division**

First local of U.S. War Department's Loyal Legion of Loggers and Lumbermen forms on November 30, 1917. On November 30, 1917, the first local of the U.S. War Department's Loyal Legion of Loggers and Lumbermen forms. The Loyal Legion is the government's effort to increase Northwest spruce-log production during World War I. During the summer of 1917, a statewide strike for better conditions and the eight-hour day halted the industry. When the strike, led by the Industrial Workers of the World (IWW, also known as Wobblies) and an AFL timber union ended without success, IWW loggers returned to work, but continued to hinder the industry as best they could using obstruction and sabotage (slowdowns, mass quitting, destroying filthy bunkhouses, and the like). The War Department attempts to persuade employers to institute the eight-hour day and improve conditions, and ultimately brings in soldiers to log the spruce forests for the duration of the war. Airplanes required for the war effort are made of Sitka spruce, available only in the Pacific Northwest. [File 7355: Full Text >](#)

Western Pine Manufacturers Association accepts the eight-hour day before dropping it on December 28, 1917. On December 28, 1917, the Western Pine Manufacturers, located in Eastern Washington and Idaho, drop the idea of the eight-hour day that they accepted earlier in the month. A unsuccessful strike for the eight-hour day by the

Industrial Workers of the World (IWW, also known as Wobblies) had halted the industry during the summer, and though loggers returned to work in the fall, they did the best they could to obstruct the industry. In the context of World War I and a desperate wartime need for lumber, both federal and state governments attempt to persuade the lumber firms to grant the eight-hour day, and to improve unsanitary and indecent conditions in the camps. The Eastern Washington Pine (short-log) firms agree, but intransigent Western Washington firms consider them traitors. Under pressure from the Western Washington firms, the Eastern Washington firms cancel the eight-hour day a short time before it is scheduled to begin on New Year's Day. [File 7356: Full Text >](#)

Pearson Field: Washington's Pioneer Airport Vancouver's Pearson Field is one of the nation's oldest operating airfields. Aviation first came to Vancouver in 1905, when Lincoln Beachey flew from Portland in a lighter-than-air craft and landed on the polo field at the Vancouver army barracks. Continuous fixed-wing aviation made its debut in 1911, and the facility, dedicated as Pearson Field in 1925, played host to a number of aviation milestones over the years. It remains a busy general aviation airport. The Pearson Air Museum and its Murdock Aviation Center are part of the Fort Vancouver National Historic Reserve. [File 7404: Full Text >](#)

p. 284-5 – **Seattle General Strike of 1919**

Seattle General Strike, 1919 The Seattle General Strike began at 10 a.m. on February 6, 1919, and paralyzed the city for five days. Never before had the nation seen a labor action of this kind. Many in Seattle were expecting revolution -- and a few wanted it -- but when 65,000 laborers walked off the job that day, the result was more an eerie calm. Initially, the strike demonstrated the power of union solidarity, but it soon fizzled. For labor, the Seattle General Strike was a glorious folly that led to government crackdowns and to the distrust of the public and the press for a decade to come. [File 861: Full Text >](#)

p. 284 – **Centralia Massacre of 1919**

Four men die in the Centralia Massacre on November 11, 1919. On November 11, 1919, a gunbattle erupts during an Armistice Day parade of American Legionnaires in Centralia, leaving four dead and resulting in the lynching of one member of the Industrial Workers of the World (IWW). World War I veterans and other Centralia citizens march on the local headquarters of the IWW, whose members anticipate an attack. Shots are fired, killing veterans Arthur McElfresh, Ben Casagrande, and Warren Grimm and wounding veterans John Watt, Bernard Eubanks, and Eugene Pfister. That night a mob removes imprisoned IWW member Wesley Everest, who is also a veteran, from the town jail and lynches him from the bridge over the Chehalis River. [File 5605: Full Text >](#)

Seven Wobblies involved in the Centralia Massacre are convicted of second-degree murder on March 13, 1920. On the evening of March 13, 1920, a Montesano jury finds seven defendants involved in the "Centralia Massacre" guilty of the murder of Warren O. Grimm. The men are all members of the Industrial Workers of the World (IWW), a controversial labor union. Two other defendants, Centralia lawyer Elmer Smith (1888-1932) and IWW member Mike Sheehan, are acquitted, and Loren Roberts, another IWW member, is found innocent by reason of insanity. A fourth defendant, Bret Faulkner had been released earlier in the trial, after all charges against him were dropped. Although the jurors ask Judge John M. Wilson for leniency in sentencing the seven guilty defendants, Wilson instead sentences the men to 25 to 40 years in prison. Many saw the trial as a gross miscarriage of justice, but the men's sentences would not be commuted until 1933. [File 8908: Full Text >](#)

p. 284 – **Wesley Everest**

Four men die in the Centralia Massacre on November 11, 1919. On November 11, 1919, a gunbattle erupts during an Armistice Day parade of American Legionnaires in Centralia, leaving four dead and resulting in the lynching of one member of the Industrial Workers of the World (IWW). World War I veterans and other Centralia citizens march on the local headquarters of the IWW, whose members anticipate an attack. Shots are fired, killing veterans Arthur McElfresh, Ben Casagrande, and Warren Grimm and wounding veterans John Watt, Bernard Eubanks, and Eugene Pfister. That night a mob removes imprisoned IWW member Wesley Everest, who is also a veteran, from the town jail and lynches him from the bridge over the Chehalis River. [File 5605: Full Text >](#)

p. 285 – **Helen Smith**

p. 286 – **Arthur Denny**

Denny party lands at Alki Point near future Seattle on November 13, 1851. On November 13, 1851, the Denny Party lands at Alki Point, not far from the site of the future Seattle. [File 5392: Full Text >](#)

First contingent of Denny party relocates to site of Seattle on April 3, 1852. On April 3, 1852, the first contingent of the Denny party relocates from Alki Point to the eastern shore of Elliott Bay, the site of future downtown Seattle. Those who make the move on April 3 are: William Bell (1817-1887), Sarah Ann (Peter) Bell (1819-1856), the four Bell children, Carson Boren's wife Mary (Kays) Boren (1831-1906), the Boren infant Gertrude, Louisa Boren (b. 1827), and recent arrival Dr. David Maynard (1808-1873). The Arthur Denny family, ill with "ague" (malarial fever), remains on Alki Point for the time being. [File 1956: Full Text >](#)

p. 286 – **Seattle Fire of 1889**

Seattle's Great Fire On June 6, 1889, a fire started from an upset glue pot in a carpentry shop located in the basement of a downtown Seattle building and spread to consume Seattle's entire business district. The Great Fire destroyed 29 square blocks of wooden buildings and about 10 brick buildings, plus the railroad terminals and nearly all of the city's wharves. [File 715: Full Text >](#)

HistoryLink Elementary: The Great Fire of Seattle Early buildings in what is now the state of Washington were mostly constructed of wood. There were no organized fire departments and not much water that could be used in the event of fire. Seattle's downtown was nearly completely burned to the ground in 1889. Many other towns also suffered terrible fires around that time. These disasters led to improvements in fire prevention and firefighting. (This essay was written for students in third and fourth grade who are studying Washington State History and for all beginning readers who want to learn more about Washington. It is one of a set of essays called *HistoryLink Elementary*, all based on existing HistoryLink essays.) [File 10743: Full Text >](#)

Seattle burns down in the Great Fire on June 6, 1889. At about 2:30 p.m. on June 6, 1889, a pot of glue bursts into flames in Victor Clairmont's cabinet shop at the corner of Front (1st Avenue) and Madison streets. Efforts to contain the fire fail and it quickly engulfs the wood-frame building. Thanks to a dry spring and a brisk wind, the flames soon spread, and volunteer firefighters tap out the town's inadequate, privately owned water mains. By sunset, Seattle's Great Fire has burned some 64 acres to smoldering ruins. [File 5115: Full Text >](#)

p. 286 – **Denny Regrade Project**

Building Seattle -- A Slideshow History of Seattle's Capital Improvement Projects This is a Slideshow photo essay on the history of Seattle's Capital Improvement Projects. Written By Walt Crowley and curated by Paul Dorpat, with Chris Goodman. Presented by Seattle City Councilmember Martha Choe. [File 7083: Full Text >](#)

Denny Regrade first phase is completed on January 6, 1899. On January 6, 1899, the first phase of the Denny Regrade is completed. The regrade of Denny Hill is one of several projects designed to make more level the steep hills of Seattle. The regrade is started in 1898 to level 1st Avenue with a uniform grade from Pine Street to Denny Way. Excess dirt is dumped into the tidelands of Elliott Bay. [File 708: Full Text >](#)

Denny Regrade (Seattle) contract for second phase is issued August 29, 1903. On August 29, 1903, C. J. Erickson (1852-1937) wins a contract to regrade a portion of Denny Hill. This is the second phase of the massive Denny Regrade, one of several projects designed to make more level the steep hills of Seattle. [File 709: Full Text >](#)

Denny Regrade second phase is completed on October 31, 1911. On October 31, 1911, the second phase of the Denny Regrade is completed. The regrade of Denny Hill is one of several projects designed to make more level the steep hills of Seattle. It incorporates an area of downtown Seattle from 2nd Avenue to 5th Avenue and from Pike Street to Cedar Street. [File 710: Full Text >](#)

Seattle's Denny Regrade is completed after 32 years on December 10, 1930. On December 10, 1930, the third and final phase of the Denny Regrade is completed. This public works project to lower Denny Hill level the area just north of downtown Seattle was executed over 32 years in three phases in 1898-1899, 1903-1911, and 1928-1930. [File 711: Full Text >](#)

p. 286 – **Lake Washington Ship Canal**

Lake Washington Ship Canal After decades of often-rancorous debate, construction of a Ship Canal to link Lake Washington and Puget Sound finally began on November 10, 1911. Following the failure of several private canal schemes, U.S. Army Corps of Engineers Gen. Hiram M. Chittenden (1858-1917), advanced the project, and his name was later given to the Government Locks linking the Sound and Salmon Bay at Ballard. The canal required digging cuts between Salmon Bay and Lake Union at Fremont and between Lake Union and Lake Washington at Montlake, and building four bascule bridges at Fremont, Ballard, the University District, and Montlake. The Locks officially opened on July 4, 1917, but the canal was not declared complete until 1934. [File 1444: Full Text >](#)

Lake Washington Ship Canal construction starts on September 1, 1911. On September 1, 1911, work begins on the Lake Washington Ship Canal. Its purpose is to construct a waterway from Puget Sound to Lake Union and Lake Washington. It will take four and a half years to complete. [File 684: Full Text >](#)

Lake Washington is lowered 8.8 feet in construction of Lake Washington Ship Canal in 1916. From July to October 1916, the level of Lake Washington is lowered 8.8 feet to the same level of Lake Union. This occurs during the construction of the Lake Washington Ship Canal. [File 686: Full Text >](#)

Seattle's Lake Washington Ship Canal is completed on May 8, 1917. On May 8, 1917, five and a half years after construction begins, Seattle's Lake Washington Ship Canal and the locks leading to and from Puget Sound are completed. This is a major public works project, which connects Lake Washington, Lake Union, Salmon Bay, and Puget Sound. [File 5374: Full Text >](#)

Woodin family crosses Lake Washington to homestead on Squak Slough (later called Sammamish River) in September 1871. In September 1871, the Woodin family traverses Lake Washington aboard a scow loaded with their belongings to reach land they have claimed on the Squak Slough (later known as the Sammamish River) at the future site of Woodinville. The area around Lake Washington is then sparsely inhabited by Indians belonging to tribes that have ceded area lands to the United States and by a scattering of American settlers on isolated farms along the lakeshore. Paddles, oars, and poles will propel people and freight between far-flung settlements and Seattle until steamboats begin operating on the lake in the late 1870s. The hilly, timbered terrain surrounding the lake discourages cross-country travel, so American settlers follow the Indian custom of relying on water highways to travel in the region. [File 10185: Full Text >](#)

***Leschi*, the first auto ferry in Western Washington, is launched on Lake Washington on December 6, 1913.** On December 6, 1913, the auto ferry *Leschi* is launched from Rainier Beach on Lake Washington. Originally designed as a side-wheeler, the *Leschi* is owned and authorized by the Seattle Port Commission, and is the first public, tax-supported water transportation in the Puget Sound region. The *Leschi* is built in response to requests from Bellevue farmers, who need a better way to transport their goods to market than by taking the passenger-only steamers then in service from Kirkland. [File 2040: Full Text >](#)

Seattle City Council approves agreement between Board of Park Commissioners and University of Washington establishing Washington Park Arboretum on December 24, 1934. On December 24, 1934, the Seattle City Council approves an agreement between the Board of Park Commissioners and the University of Washington establishing the Washington Park Arboretum. The largely undeveloped park, located between Seattle's Madison Park and Montlake neighborhoods, will benefit from the expertise of university faculty and the new entity created by the agreement, the Arboretum and Botanical Garden Committee, will serve as the fiscal agent for receiving Works Progress Administration funding for labor to clear and grade the park and to build various structures. James Frederick Dawson (1874-1941) of the Olmsted Brothers Landscape Architects firm will create a preliminary plan for the arboretum in 1936. The committee created by the 1934 agreement will continue to guide the arboretum into the twenty-first century, and a 2001 master plan will provide a new vision for managing the collections and serving the public. [File 10242: Full Text >](#)

Seattle Neighborhoods: Montlake -- Thumbnail History Seattle's Montlake is a quiet urban neighborhood located south of the Montlake Cut/Lake Washington Ship Canal and composed mainly of single-family homes with a small commercial district. Its shoreline is bordered to the west by Portage Bay, to the north by the Lake Washington Ship Canal, and to the east by Union Bay. For the purposes of this essay, on land the Montlake Neighborhood's western boundary is 15th Avenue E, its southern boundary is Interlaken Park, and its eastern boundary is the Washington Park Arboretum. Early real-estate promoters chose the name Montlake to summon up bucolic images of lakes and mountains, the better to sell lots. What had been an important transportation corridor, with several villages in the area, for Lakes Duwamish people became a placid urban neighborhood -- dubbed by one history of the neighborhood an Urban Eden. Montlake's placidity has, however, faced major challenges. Montlake's strategic geographic location has made it historically useful as a place of passage, but rendered it vulnerable to several major construction projects, including the Montlake Cut portion of the Lake Washington Ship Canal, the Montlake Bridge, State Route 520, and the new Sound Transit tunnel currently being built underneath it. The opening of Montlake Cut in 1916 led to radical changes in the neighborhood's shoreline and blocked travel to the north until the Montlake Bridge opened in 1925. Construction of SR 520 in the early 1960s doomed a large swath of the community for right-of-way, and also sliced the neighborhood in two and despoiled parts of the shoreline. Planned widening of SR 520 scheduled to begin in 2012 will bring further changes to the built and natural environments. [File 10170: Full Text >](#)

Miller Street Landfill, Montlake (Seattle) The Miller Street Landfill, called the Miller Street Dump during its working life, served for more than 20 years as one of multiple dumps scattered around Seattle, often in low-lying areas. Three large dumping grounds were arrayed between the south end of today's Washington Park Arboretum and the northern shore of Union Bay: the Washington Park Dump near the Arboretum's south end, the University Dump at the north end of Union Bay, and the Miller Street Dump on the southern shore of Union Bay. The Miller Street Dump opened sometime between 1911 and 1916, closed in 1936, and for a time was part of the Arboretum and owned by the City. When the original Evergreen Point Bridge was built in the 1960s, the property was taken over by the Washington State Department of Transportation and the park-like setting, although still open to the public, is now surrounded by ramps leading to and from the bridge and is home to the famous "ramps to nowhere." As part of

the SR 520 Bridge Replacement Project, the department intends (as of 2012) to remove all of the ramps currently on the property, which may in time once again become part of the Arboretum. [File 10171: Full Text >](#)

King County Superior Court approves condemnation of land along a proposed route of Lake Washington Ship Canal (later the route of State Route 520) on November 25, 1898. On November 25, 1898, King County Superior Court approves the condemnation of land along the proposed route of the Lake Washington Ship Canal in Seattle. The court is acting on a petition from the King County Board of County Commissioners, which was created to meet a requirement laid out by the federal government. An act passed by Congress in 1894 authorized the Army Corps of Engineers to begin planning to build a ship canal between Lake Washington and Puget Sound, once the land was secured. This is not the first, nor will it be the last right-of-way reserved for a canal, which will open in 1917, to the north of the 1898 route. During the 1960s, the highway that becomes State Route 520 will be built over land obtained in the 1898 condemnation. [File 10186: Full Text >](#)

Montlake Cut (Seattle) The Montlake Cut, between the Montlake and University District neighborhoods in Seattle, connects Lake Washington and Lake Union as part of the Lake Washington Ship Canal. When it was completed in 1916, it marked the realization of a 62-year-old idea to link the lakes with Puget Sound, creating a freshwater harbor in Seattle and a waterway connecting Seattle's shipping harbor in Elliott Bay with the resource-rich interior of King County. The canal boosted economic development on the lakes and helped reduce flooding in the Duwamish River valley (its former outlet), but it also had far-reaching environmental and cultural consequences. [File 10221: Full Text >](#)

Due to construction of Lake Washington Ship Canal, Lake Washington is lowered 8.8 feet beginning on August 26, 1916, and the Black River disappears. Lake Washington is lowered 8.8 feet and the Black River disappears due to construction of the Lake Washington Ship Canal in 1916. The ship canal is being built between Lake Washington and Puget Sound. To address the different the levels between the levels of Lake Washington, Lake Union, Salmon Bay, and Shilshole Bay, the government builds a double lock at Ballard and lowers Lake Washington to the same height as Lake Union, from about 30 feet above mean lower low water (the average of each day's lowest low tide) on Shilshole Bay to 21 feet. The level of Salmon Bay is raised to 21 feet behind the locks and dam at its mouth. The lowering of Lake Washington and raising of Salmon Bay causes a number of changes to the watershed, the most dramatic of which is the drying up of the Black River when the level of Lake Washington drops below the river channel entrance. As a result, the way water moves through the watershed changes drastically, with environmental and human consequences. [File 686: Full Text >](#)

Seattle's Montlake Bridge spanning Montlake Cut opens on June 27, 1925. On June 27, 1925, Seattle's Montlake Bridge spanning the Lake Washington Ship Canal's Montlake Cut is officially opened in a ceremony that draws thousands of celebrants. The span is a double-leaf bascule bridge with distinctive Gothic control towers intended to reflect the dominant architectural forms of the nearby University of Washington campus. The last to be built of the four bascule bridges crossing the canal, and widely considered the most beautiful, it nonetheless has had a difficult time gaining voter approval. Originally paid for and operated by the City of Seattle, it will later will taken over by the Washington State Department of Transportation (WSDOT) as part of State Route 513. [File 3133: Full Text >](#)

p. 286 – **Ballard Locks**

Building Seattle -- A Slideshow History of Seattle's Capital Improvement Projects This is a Slideshow photo essay on the history of Seattle's Capital Improvement Projects. Written By Walt Crowley and curated by Paul Dorpat, with Chris Goodman. Presented by Seattle City Councilmember Martha Choe. [File 7083: Full Text >](#)
SLIDE 18

p. 286 – Hiram Chittenden

p. 286 – **Smith Tower**

Smith Tower (Seattle) When Seattle's pyramid-capped Smith Tower officially opened on July 4, 1914, its greatest claim to fame was its 462-foot height. It was originally one of the tallest buildings in the country outside of New York, and was the tallest west of Ohio. This territorial hegemony steadily shrank as higher buildings marched westward: By 1923 it was the tallest west of Chicago, by 1931 the tallest west of Kansas City, and by 1943 the tallest west of Dallas, but it did remain the tallest building west of the Rockies for nearly half a century. At birth it was nearly twice as tall as the previously highest building in town (the 247-foot clock tower of the King Street Station), but by 1985 it was less than half the height of the 937-foot Bank of America Tower (originally Columbia Center.) [File 4310: Full Text >](#)

Seattle's Smith Tower building permit is issued on October 20, 1910. On October 20, 1910, the City of Seattle issues a permit to build a 36-story steel frame and concrete office building at the northeast corner of 2nd Avenue and Yesler Way. It will be completed in 1914 as the Smith Tower, tallest building west of Ohio at the time. Edwin H. Gaggin and T. Walker Gaggin of Syracuse, New York, are the architects, and Lyman Cornelius Smith (1834-1910) is the owner. [File 727: Full Text >](#)

Seattle's Smith Tower, tallest building west of Ohio, is dedicated on July 4, 1914. On July 4, 1914, the 462-foot-high Smith Tower, located in downtown Seattle, is dedicated. At the time it is one of the tallest buildings west of New York and the tallest building west of Ohio. [File 5370: Full Text >](#)

Ivar Haglund buys Seattle's Smith Tower on May 19, 1976. On May 19, 1976, Ivar Haglund (1905-1985), the restaurateur famed for his escapades, folksinging, storytelling, and waterfront clam restaurant, buys Seattle's Smith Tower for \$1.8 million. He buys it because he likes it. As a child in 1913 he had seen the building under construction. Smith Tower was for many years the tallest building west of the Mississippi River. [File 2508: Full Text >](#)

p. 287 – **Spokane**

Spokane -- Thumbnail History Spokane is the largest city in Eastern Washington and the commercial hub for an interstate area known formerly as the Inland Empire and now as the Inland Northwest. After settlement in the 1870s, it quickly became the county seat of Spokane County and the regional center for mining, agriculture, timber, transportation, education, and medical services. Urban development has spread far beyond the 2005 population of 200,000 residing within the present city limits in a county of almost 430,000. Spokane, like many cities, has undergone periods of boom, bust, stagnation, and recovery. For well over 100 years, it has provided a welcome urban oasis in the less populated stretch of plains and mountains between the Mississippi River and Seattle. [File 7462: Full Text >](#)

p. 286 – **flu epidemic of 1918**

Flu epidemic hits Seattle on October 3, 1918. On October 3, 1918, the Spanish Influenza pandemic (worldwide epidemic) arrives in Seattle with 700 cases and one death reported at the University of Washington Naval Training Station. Two days later, Seattle Health Commissioner Dr. J. S. McBride states that the disease is "admittedly prevalent." Some 1,600 persons die in Seattle during the next six months despite the closing of theaters and schools, the banning of public gatherings, and the widespread wearing of gauze masks. [File 2090: Full Text >](#)

p. 287 – **James Glover**

J. J. Downing and S. R. Scranton file claims and build a sawmill at Spokane Falls in May 1871. In May 1871, J. J. Downing and S. R. Scranton file claims and build a sawmill at Spokane Falls. It is the first American settlement at what will become downtown Spokane. Both men will sell their claims two years later and move on. [File 5132: Full Text >](#)

p. 287 – **Channeled Scablands of Eastern Washington**

Bretz, J Harlen (1882-1981), Geologist J Harlen Bretz was a geologist whose ideas about the origins of the "scablands" of Eastern Washington evoked ridicule when he first proposed them, in the 1920s, but eventually revolutionized the science of geology. Bretz argued that the deep canyons and pockmarked buttes of the scablands had been created by a sudden, catastrophic flood -- not, as most of his peers believed, by eons of gradual erosion. It was a bold challenge to the prevailing principle of "uniformitarianism," which held that the earth was shaped by processes that can be observed in the present. Since a flood of the almost Biblical proportions envisioned by Bretz had never been seen, it was dismissed as a throwback to the pre-scientific doctrine of "catastrophism." Not until the 1940s did other geologists begin to present new evidence supporting the flood theory. Satellite imagery in the 1970s provided the final vindication. Bretz had the satisfaction of living long enough to see his once heretical ideas become the new orthodoxy. In 1979, at age 96, he received the Penrose Medal, geology's highest honor. He later reportedly told his son: "All my enemies are dead, so I have no one to gloat over" (*Smithsonian*). [File 8382: Full Text >](#)

p. 287 – **Spokane Falls Fire of 1889**

Great Spokane Fire destroys downtown Spokane Falls on August 4, 1889. On Sunday, August 4, 1889, fire destroys most of downtown Spokane Falls. It begins in an area of flimsy wooden structures and quickly engulfs the substantial stone and brick buildings of the business district. Property losses are huge, and one death is reported. Initially the fire is blamed on Rolla A. Jones, who was in charge of the water system and was said to have gone fishing after leaving the system in the charge of a complete incompetent. Later, city fathers will exonerate Jones, but this account, although false, will be repeated in many histories of the fire. Spokane will quickly rebuild as fine new buildings of a revitalized downtown rise from the ashes. [File 7696: Full Text >](#)

p. 288 – **expansion of military during WWI**

Fort Lewis, Part 1, 1917-1927 In 1916 Tacoma civic leaders promoted the development of a United States Army camp on the Nisqually Plain, located in Pierce County south of Tacoma. They succeeded in gaining War Department support and in January 1917 Pierce County voters overwhelmingly approved a bond to purchase about 70,000 acres and donate the land to the federal government for a military camp. In May 1917, Captain David L. Stone (b. 1876), Quartermaster Corps, arrived at the American Lake site to supervise camp construction. Hurley-Mason Construction of Tacoma started work on June 15. They erected 1,757 major buildings with a troop capacity of 44,685. On July 18, 1917, the camp was named in honor of Meriwether Lewis (1774-1809) of the Lewis and Clark expedition, and it opened on September 1, 1917. The Ninety-First Division, Major General Henry A. Greene commanding, arrived and launched into rigorous training. The Ninety-First Division served with honor in France and as they fought, the Thirteenth Division trained at Camp Lewis, but then World War I ended and the division dissolved. Camp Lewis

demobilized soldiers and then went into dramatic decline. Pierce County became concerned over lack of use and some even argued that the county should take back the land. However, the camp recovered and in 1927 a large building program made the post permanent and in recognition of that status became Fort Lewis. This is Part 1 of a two-part history of Fort Lewis, located in Pierce County, south of Tacoma. [File 8455: Full Text >](#)

McChord Field, McChord Air Force Base, and Joint Base Lewis-McChord: Part 1 McChord Air Force Base, now part of Joint Base Lewis-McChord and located south of Tacoma, started out as a municipal airport serving Pierce County before being taken over by the military in 1938. The federal government converted the civilian facility into a major air force base, with the Public Works Administration (PWA) building permanent barracks, hangars, housing, and administration buildings in the Moderne style. The former Tacoma Field was named McChord Field in honor of Colonel William C. McChord (1881-1937) on May 5, 1938. During World War II McChord Field served as a major bomber-training base. Nine airmen who participated in the April 1942 Doolittle raid had their B-25 training here. Following the formation of the U.S. Air Force in 1947 the field became McChord Air Force Base. [File 9934: Full Text >](#)

Puget Sound Naval Shipyard Puget Sound Naval Shipyard, located adjacent to the city of Bremerton on Sinclair Inlet, was established in 1891. It was the first dry-dock and repair facility in the Northwest capable of handling the largest ships. During World War I (1917-1918), the shipyard expanded to include shipbuilding, adding hundreds of new ships and boats to the Allied war effort. During the Great Depression (1929-1939), the shipyard went through a period of expansion as the nation built up its fleet. During World War II (1941-1945), the Puget Sound Naval Shipyard's primary mission was the repair of Pacific Fleet warships damaged in battle. After the war, the shipyard's mission was changed from repair work to the deactivation and storage of Pacific Fleet vessels. Puget Sound Naval Shipyard also engaged in an extensive program of modernizing aircraft carriers, including the conversion of conventional flight decks to the angled decks used by the new jet aircraft. During the Korean Conflict (1950-1953), the facility activated many of the ships in the reserve "mothball" fleet, deactivating them again in 1954. During the 1950s the shipyard entered into a new era of construction with the building of two new guided missile frigates. In 1961, the shipyard was designated as a submarine repair facility and in 1965 it was established as a nuclear-capable repair facility. In 1992, the shipyard was placed on the National Register of Historic Places. Today, the Puget Sound Naval Shipyard is the largest and most diverse shipyard on the West Coast and one of Washington state's largest industrial complexes.

[File 5579: Full Text >](#)

Educating Military Children at Fort Lewis and McChord Field Camp Lewis, the forerunner of Fort Lewis (and later Joint Base Lewis-McChord) in Pierce County, was constructed in 1917 without family housing or schools. After World War I ended, families moved on to the installation and their children attended the nearby civilian DuPont School. Educating the children from Fort Lewis created a burden for the DuPont school district, which did not collect property taxes from the fort. In 1949 Fort Lewis representatives testified to the U.S. Congress that DuPont had an unreasonable burden. A federal law was passed providing funds to school districts impacted by a large military presence. With this funding, school construction began at Fort Lewis and the adjacent McChord Air Force Base. Quickly a boundary issue emerged between the Clover Park and DuPont-Fort Lewis school districts over which had responsibility for schools on the bases. The battle lasted 15 years until Clover Park was identified as the school district for Fort Lewis and McChord Air Force Base. [File 10414: Full Text >](#)

Sand Point: The Early Years, 1850-1920 Sand Point is a peninsula that juts into Lake Washington within the present (2000) city limits of north Seattle. Sand Point's documented history begins in 1850 when Isaac Ebey (1818-1857) glided in a canoe paddled by Indians across the waters of Lake Washington. Within a few decades, steamboats plied the lake, locomotives crossing a nearby bluff spouted steam, and automobiles bumped along Sand Point's rough dirt roads. The early era concluded with airplanes landing on the grassy strip of what would become in 1920 the Sand Point Naval Air Station. During the pre-Naval Air Station era, homesteaders raised families at Sand Point, a shipyard built steamboats, and a brick manufacturing firm dug and fired clay. A post office opened, and

children learned reading, writing, and arithmetic at a one room school house. Eventually, all disappeared to make way for the era of flight. [File 2487: Full Text >](#)

USS *Shenandoah*, first rigid airship to make a transcontinental flight, visits Camp Lewis on October 18, 1924.

On October 18, 1924, the USS *Shenandoah*, the first rigid, lighter-than-air craft to make a transcontinental flight, arrives at Camp Lewis. On its cross-country flight, the *Shenandoah* will stop at three military bases: Fort Worth, Texas; North Island, San Diego; and Camp Lewis, Washington. At each stop a mooring mast is constructed that the airship can tether to, an arrangement that demonstrates that giant hangars were not needed for the dirigibles. While in the Puget Sound region, the *Shenandoah* also will fly over Tacoma, Seattle, and Bremerton. It will attract large crowds of spectators wherever it appears. The *Shenandoah* will crash the following year. In 1937, with the disastrous explosion of the *Hindenburg*, the era of rigid, lighter-than-air dirigibles will come to an end. [File 10246: Full Text >](#)

p. 289 – Immigration Quota Act of 1924

p. 289 – anti-Alien Land Act (1921)

Washington state legislators pass the Alien Land Law in 1921. In 1921, Washington state legislators pass the Alien Land Law restricting property ownership. Washington's 1889 constitution had banned the sale of land to "aliens ineligible in citizenship." Asians were the only immigrants ineligible to become naturalized U.S. citizens. The new law extended the restrictions to cover leasing or renting land and renewing old leases. [File 2124: Full Text >](#)

p. 289 – Klu Klux Klan

Ku Klux Klan stages huge rally in Issaquah on July 26, 1924. On July 26, 1924, the Ku Klux Klan, an all-white, racist, anti-Semitic, anti-Catholic organization, promises to "put Issaquah on the map" with a rally that draws onlookers conservatively estimated at 13,000. (Issaquah is located in King County, east of Lake Washington and just south of Lake Sammamish.) [File 1682: Full Text >](#)

CHAPTER 10: THE GREAT DEPRESSION and WORLD WAR II, 1929 – 1945

p. 295-9 – Great Depression

Depression, The Great, 1929-1939 For 10 years beginning in 1929, most of the world experienced the largest economic depression in history. The Great Depression devastated national economies, threw millions out of work, and contributed to the outbreak of World War II. In Seattle and King County, the Depression resulted in tens of thousands unemployed and underemployed, the reemergence of organized labor, and a redefinition of state politics. The most enduring symbols of the hard times were the shanty towns called Hooverilles, thrown up by the homeless. Recovery programs under the administration of President Franklin D. Roosevelt (1882-1945) produced an array of public works projects from parks to dams to public housing. The hard times ended with the rapid growth in employment and government spending for World War II. [File 3717: Full Text >](#)

Dance Marathons of the 1920s and 1930s Dance Marathons (also called Walkathons), an American phenomenon of the 1920s and 1930s, were human endurance contests in which couples danced almost non-stop for hundreds of hours (as long as a month or two), competing for prize money. Dance marathons originated as part of an early-1920s, giddy, jazz-age fad for human endurance competitions such as flagpole sitting and six-day bicycle races.

Dance marathons persisted throughout the 1930s as partially staged performance events, mirroring the marathon of desperation Americans endured during the Great Depression. In these dance endurance contests, a mix of local hopefuls and seasoned professional marathoners danced, walked, shuffled, sprinted, and sometimes cracked under the pressure and exhaustion of round-the-clock motion. A 25-cent admission price entitled audience members to watch as long as they pleased. Dance marathons were held in Spokane, Seattle, Yakima, Wenatchee, Bellingham, and elsewhere. They occupied a slightly disreputable niche in society, and many towns banned them, finding them disruptive, disturbing, and even repugnant. [File 5534: Full Text >](#)

See many individual dance contest articles such as the next essay (by keying in dance marathons and looking in center (timeline) column

Dance Marathon/Walkathon closes in Bellingham after 650 hours (27 days) on January 28, 1931. On January 28, 1931, a dance marathon (also called a walkathon) competition closes in Bellingham after 650 hours (about 27 days). The contestants voluntarily agree to end the event early because of a City Council ban on such contests that is about to take effect. Dance marathons are human endurance contests in which couples dance almost non-stop for hundreds of hours (as long as a month or two), competing for prize money. [File 5606: Full Text >](#)

Governor Clarence D. Martin signs into law State Bill 186 outlawing dance marathons statewide on March 15, 1937. On March 15, 1937, Governor Clarence D. Martin signs into law State Bill 189 outlawing dance marathons statewide. Dance marathons are Depression-era human endurance contests in which couples dance almost non-stop for hundreds of hours (as long as a month or two), competing for prize money. [File 5599: Full Text >](#)

Farming and Shepherding during the Great Depression: A Reminiscence by Milan DeRuwe This reminiscence by Milan DeRuwe (1917-2006) describes his life growing up on a family farm near Colville, Washington, the hardships of the Great Depression, the process of losing the farm and going then into "range sheep business" as distinct from the ranch sheep business, in which the herd is enclosed. It also relates the story of a young shepherd's struggle to go to college and become the first in his family to receive a college education. It is excerpted from "Gone Forever: The Shepherding Life of the 1930s," by Milan DeRuwe, which appeared in *The Pacific Northwester*, Vol. 46, No. 2 (October 2002). It is reprinted by kind permission. [File 8626: Full Text >](#)

Raising sheep in Eastern Washington: A Reminiscence by Milan DeRuwe This People's History interview of Milan DeRuwe (1917-2006) on the sheep business in Eastern Washington was reprinted from *The Pacific Northwester*, Vol. 45, No. 2 (October 2002), from an issue titled "Gone Forever: The Shepherding Life of the 1930s." It is reprinted by kind permission. The interview is adapted and condensed from an oral history recorded and transcribed by John Ellingson for the oral history collection at the Northwest Museum of Arts and Culture. [File 8971: Full Text >](#)

p. 296 – **“Black Tuesday” (great depression)**

Stock market crash, called Black Tuesday, hits on October 29, 1929. On October 29, 1929, the price of stocks on the New York Stock Exchange plummet to new lows. The day becomes known as Black Tuesday because of the number of fortunes lost. Throughout the day, Seattle stock exchanges and local stockbrokers' offices are densely packed with tense stockholders witnessing the decline. [File 1430: Full Text >](#)

p. 298 – **William Randolph Hearst**

Hearst editorial reveals takeover of *Seattle Post-Intelligencer* on December 27, 1921. On December 27, 1921, the fact that William Randolph Hearst (1863-1951) has taken over the *Seattle Post-Intelligencer* is revealed when his first editorial appears in the newspaper. [File 2518: Full Text >](#)

p. 298 – **John D. Rockefeller**

The Monte Cristo Mining Company files a plat to begin developing a community on February 24, 1893. On February 24, 1893, the Monte Cristo Mining Company files a plat in Cleveland, Ohio, for the town of Monte Cristo, located in Snohomish County, Washington. The corporation, located on its mining claims at the junction of Glacier and Seventy-six creeks, files a plat creating the most inaccessible town in the county, at the highest elevation (2,900 feet). With the railroad expected to arrive by late summer, several hundred permanent residents are anticipated, with many more men working in the mines and prospecting for new veins of ore deep in the Cascade Mountains. [File 8405: Full Text >](#)

p. 300 – **Hooverilles**

Hooverville: Shantytown of Seattle's Great Depression During the fall and winter of 1931 and 1932, unemployed workers established Seattle's "Hooverville," a shantytown named in sarcastic honor of U.S. President Herbert Hoover (1874-1964), on whose beat the Great Depression began. In October 1931, an unemployed lumberjack by the name of Jesse Jackson and 20 others started building shacks on vacant land owned by the Port of Seattle located a few blocks south of Pioneer Square. [File 741: Full Text >](#)

Unemployed workers build the Seattle shantytown Hooverville in October 1931. In October 1931, unemployed workers build a shantytown on nine acres of vacant land located a few blocks south of Pioneer Square. They call the shantytown Hooverville, in ironic homage to President Herbert Hoover (1874-1964), on whose beat the Great Depression began. Seattle's Hooverville remains in existence for the years of the Depression. [File 1981: Full Text >](#)

Census of Seattle's Depression-era shantytown, Hooverville, is taken in March 1934. During March 1934, a census of Seattle's "Hooverville," a shantytown built at the beginning of the Great Depression, finds 632 men and seven women living in 479 shanties in a 12-to-15-square-block area south of Seattle's Pioneer Square. [File 740: Full Text >](#)

Hooverville (in Seattle) burns down on April 10, 1941. On April 10, 1941, Hooverville, the Depression-era shantytown built south of Seattle's Pioneer Square, burns down. As this town within a town became engulfed in flames, the smoke could be seen all over Seattle. After the fire, the Seattle Port Commission condemned all shacks and other abodes in the area. [File 2305: Full Text >](#)

p. 302 – **Clyde Pangborn**

Pangborn, Clyde Edward (1894-1958) Clyde Pangborn, born in Bridgeport, Washington, was one of the leading "barnstormers" -- aerial stuntmen -- of the 1920s. Known as "Upside Down Pang," he performed stunts such as slow-rolling an airplane onto its back and flying upside down. He held the world record for changing planes mid-air, and was the first aviator to make a nonstop trans-Pacific flight, a daring feat that he completed in 1931 by belly-landing his Bellanca Skyrocket in what is now East Wenatchee. Pangborn learned to fly in the U.S. Army during World War I and served both Britain and the United States during World War II. He was not only an entertainer who thrilled crowds with his aerial antics, but also a skilled test pilot. [File 7495: Full Text >](#)

p. 302 – **Hugh Herndon**

Clyde Pangborn belly-lands a monoplane in Wenatchee to complete the first nonstop airplane flight between Japan and the United States on October 5, 1931. On October 5, 1931, Clyde Pangborn (1894-1958) and Hugh Herndon Jr. land in Wenatchee, completing the first nonstop airplane flight between Japan and the United States. They are flying a Bellanca Skyrocket monoplane. The flight succeeds in part because Pangborn, a stunt aviator and test pilot, dropped the landing gear into the ocean shortly after takeoff in order to lighten the aircraft. In Wenatchee he successfully belly-lands the airplane, according to plan. [File 5400: Full Text >](#)

p. 303 – **Miss Veedol**

Douglas County -- Thumbnail History Douglas County is a predominantly rural county located in north central Washington. Waterville is the county seat. The county's proximity to Grand Coulee Dam just over the county line (spanning the Columbia River between Okanogan and Grant counties), as well as the four Columbia River dams within the county have over time provided work for thousands of Douglas County residents. The county comprises 1821 square miles, and ranks 17th in size among Washington's 39 counties. The Columbia River, either flowing through its channel or constricted in equalizing reservoirs behind dams, almost completely encircles Douglas County, which is bordered by Chelan County to the west, Okanogan County to the north, Grant County to the east/southeast, and a small part of Kittitas County to the south. As of June 2006 Douglas County had an estimated population of 35,700. East Wenatchee (population 11,420) and Bridgeport (population 2075) are the largest towns. Agriculture, especially apple, pear, and cherry orchards, and wheat, provides a significant percentage of the county's employment. [File 7961: Full Text >](#)

p. 304 – **Franklin D. Roosevelt**

Roosevelt visits construction site of Grand Coulee Dam for second time on October 2, 1937. On October 2, 1937, President Franklin D. Roosevelt (1882-1945) visits the construction site of Grand Coulee Dam for the second time. Marveling at the "wonderful progress" made since his first visit, three years earlier, Roosevelt describes the dam and the related Columbia Basin Reclamation Project as undertakings that will benefit the entire nation -- not just the remote corner of Washington State where they are located. He also indirectly promises to secure the federal funds needed to complete the project. "We are building here something that is going to do a great amount of good for this nation through all the years to come," he says ("Remarks at Grand Coulee Dam"). [File 8618: Full Text >](#)

p. 304 – **Herbert Hoover**

Herbert Hoover and Republicans carry Washington state in the general election on November 6, 1928. On November 6, 1928, Herbert Hoover (1874-1964) wins election as president and Roland Hartley (1864-1952) wins re-election as governor. Democratic U.S. Senator Clarence C. Dill (b. 1884) is retained in office. [File 5562: Full Text >](#)

p. 306 – **Clarence Martin**

Governor Clarence Martin signs the Steele Act establishing the Washington State Liquor Control Board on January 23, 1934. On January 23, 1934, Washington Governor Clarence Martin (1887-1955) signs the Steele Liquor Act establishing the Washington State Liquor Control Board. Comprised of three executive members appointed by the governor for nine-, six-, or three-year terms, the board is charged with controlling public access to alcohol by restraining competition. This is accomplished by regulating the legal manufacture and distribution of alcohol within the state, and by licensing the sale of alcoholic beverages in restaurants and hotels with explicit standards regulating required ratios of food sale to beverage sale. [File 9692: Full Text >](#)

p. 306 – **Federal Reserve System**

Federal Reserve Bank (Seattle) The building formally known as the Federal Reserve Bank of San Francisco -- Seattle Branch is located on 2nd Avenue between Madison and Spring streets in downtown Seattle. It housed the Seattle branch of the Federal Reserve Bank of San Francisco for more than 50 years. Designed in 1949 by architect William Bain Sr. (1896-1985) of the firm NBBJ (Naramore, Bain, Brady and Johanson) in the Moderne style, the building's design conveys a sense permanence and security. Its austerity and visual weight, as well as its relatively short stature, stand out among the many Modern skyscrapers in the surrounding financial district. The building gave the branch the room it needed to grow along with the needs of the banking industry in the Northwest. In February 2008 the branch closed when bank operations moved to a new building in Renton. [File 8785: Full Text >](#)

p. 306 – **Agricultural Adjustment Act (key words)**

p. 307 – **National Recovery Administration**

p. 307 – **Civilian Conservation Corps (CCC)**

CCC Camp opens on Bacon Creek in May 1933. In May 1933, Camp Skagit, F-13, opens on Bacon Creek in Skagit County six weeks after Congress passes the Emergency Conservation Work Act. The Act creates the program later called the Civilian Conservation Corps (CCC). The CCC was a part of President Franklin D. Roosevelt's vision of putting the nation back to work during the Great Depression. Young men aged 18-25 could earn \$30 a month, \$25 of which went back to their families. While providing employment and housing for men out of work, the "3 C's" created a lasting legacy of beautiful parks, buildings, trails, bridges, and fire lookouts. [File 5657: Full Text >](#)

Civilian Conservation Corps begins building an observation tower on Mt. Constitution, Orcas Island, in August 1935. In August 1935, 28 men from the 4768th Company of the Civilian Conservation Corps (CCC) begin constructing a stone observation tower atop 2,409-foot Mt. Constitution in Moran State Park on Orcas Island. Designed by noted Seattle architect Ellsworth Storey (1879-1960), the tower is the literal and figurative high point of eight years of work by crews from the CCC's Camp Moran. Between 1933 and 1941, the CCC men build miles of trails, many buildings, and numerous other improvements in Moran State Park, which was donated to the state in 1921 by former Seattle mayor and shipbuilder Robert Moran (1857-1943). [File 7517: Full Text >](#)

CCC Camp Darrington opens on May 20, 1933. On May 20, 1933, Civilian Conservation Corps (CCC) Camp Darrington opens a half mile north of the town of Darrington in Snohomish County. Designated as a forest service camp, it will undertake a wide variety of projects that will benefit out-of-work young men and their families throughout the long years of the Great

Depression. It will serve several thousand enrollees over the years, providing jobs and creating structures in the national forest nearby, making roads, and fighting fires. It will close in 1942. [File 8583: Full Text >](#)

p. 307 – **Works Progress Administration (WPA)**

King County Land Use Survey -- a Remarkable WPA Project of the Great Depression In 1936, King County undertook a major property survey, the King County Land Use Survey, which was financed by the federal Works Progress Administration (WPA). The project greatly added to the county's tax base, and left an amazing record of built King County. After preparatory work was done, some 300 to 400 Washingtonians glad of a job set out to gather data on buildings and property. At the time many properties were not taxed and many others were grossly under-valued. The survey, which concluded in September 1940, employed an average of 600 people until 1939, and 200 in its final stages. It was the largest white-collar WPA project to be carried out in King County. It resulted in a dramatic gain of assessed real estate valuation, increasing tax revenues by \$574,000 per year. As part of the data collected, photographs were taken of nearly every structure standing in King County at the time. This remarkable record, housed at the Puget Sound Branch of the Washington State Archives, provides the intrepid time-traveler with a passport to Seattle and King County in the final years of the Great Depression. [File 3692: Full Text >](#)

Federal Bureau of Air Commerce approves 34 Washington airport projects for WPA funding on December 20, 1935. On December 20, 1935, the Federal Bureau of Air Commerce approves 34 Washington state airport projects as eligible for Works Progress Administration (WPA) funding. WPA acceptance of these projects in early 1936 marks the first time federal funds have been appropriated to build airports in the state. [File 7224: Full Text >](#)

WPA builds Cowen Park Bridge in Seattle's Ravenna neighborhood in 1936. In 1936, the Works Progress Administration (WPA) builds the Art Deco style Cowen Park Bridge nearly 60 feet above the Ravenna Creek bed. The architecturally notable bridge is made from reinforced concrete. It is part of 15th Avenue NE at 60th Street, located at the northern end of Seattle's University District, the western end of the Ravenna District, and the southern end of the Roosevelt District. [File 3132: Full Text >](#)

Federal Theatre Project Congress created the Federal Theatre Project in 1935 to provide work for theater professionals during the Great Depression. The Project was funded under the Works Progress Administration (WPA) and directed on the national level by Vassar College drama professor Hallie Flanagan (1890-1969). Seattle initially sponsored three units: the Federal Players (a white unit), the Negro Repertory Company (an African-American unit), and Variety/Vaudeville. In 1937 a Children's Theatre unit was created. Prominently involved in the leadership were University of Washington Drama professor Glenn Hughes (1894-1964) and Burton James (1888-1951) and Florence James (1892-1988) of the Seattle Repertory Playhouse. The United States Congress abruptly disbanded the Federal Theatre Project on June 30, 1939, amid cries of censorship from performers and accusations of communist infiltration from both within and without the organization. [File 3978: Full Text >](#)

Negro Repertory Company The Negro Repertory Company served as the African American unit of Seattle's Federal Theatre Project. Congress had created the Federal Theatre Project in 1935, under the auspices of the Works Progress Administration (WPA), to provide work for theater professionals during the Great Depression. Burton James (1888-1951) and Florence James (1892-1988) of the Seattle Repertory Playhouse founded the Negro Repertory Company in January 1936, in cooperation with the Seattle Urban League. The company was one of four Seattle units. It was initially housed in the James's Seattle Repertory Playhouse at 4041 University Way. [File 3976: Full Text >](#)

p. 307 – **Civilian Works Administration (CWA)**

p. 307-9 – **Grand Coulee Dam**

Grand Coulee Dam Grand Coulee Dam, hailed as the "Eighth Wonder of the World" when it was completed in 1941, is as confounding to the human eye as an elephant might be to an ant. It girdles the Columbia River with 12 million cubic yards of concrete, stacked one mile wide and as tall as a 46-story building, backing up a 150-mile long reservoir, spinning out more kilowatts than any other dam in the United States. As gargantuan as it is, Grand Coulee is only part of the massive Columbia Basin Project, which includes four other dams, three storage lakes, and 2,300 miles of irrigation canals, snaking through half a million acres of desert. No other public works project has had a greater impact on the development of the Pacific Northwest. However, the social and environmental costs have been so severe, according to a study released in 2000, that Grand Coulee probably could not be built today. [File 7264: Full Text >](#)

p. 307 – **Rufus Woods**

Woods, Rufus (1878-1950) Longtime owner, editor, and publisher of the *Wenatchee Daily World* and a major instigator of the Grand Coulee Dam, Rufus Woods was a titan of twentieth-century Pacific Northwest development. He was the epitome of the crusading small-town newspaperman whose "lifelong preoccupation [was] the economic advancement of North Central Washington" (Ficken, 215). He was a relentless promoter of the Grand Coulee Dam and used his newspaper and personal contacts with local, state, and national leaders to pursue his goal of bringing hydroelectric power and irrigation to Central Washington. A nominal Republican all of his life, he never let party affiliation stand in the way of the interests of Wenatchee and the four counties encircled within the "Big Bend" of the Columbia. He came to realize that huge projects such as the Grand Coulee were beyond the capabilities of private enterprise, requiring bipartisan government participation on the federal level. The completion of the great dam in 1941 only led to more fights for Woods to bring some degree of regional control and economic benefit to the Wenatchee area. [File 8391: Full Text >](#)

p. 307 – **Billy Clapp**

First irrigation water reaches Pasco on May 15, 1948. On May 15, 1948, a Pasco farm receives the first water pumped from the Columbia Basin Irrigation Project. At about 11:15 a.m., Pasco Judge B. B. Horrigan gives the signal to open the canal gate. The water results from decades of dreams and the completion of Grand Coulee Dam. [File 7555: Full Text >](#)

p. 308 – **Rock Island Dam**

p. 308 – **Columbia River Dam**

Columbia River Treaty and Canada Canada and the United States initially signed the Columbia River Treaty in 1961. At first glance, the treaty seems straightforward, as its formal title suggests: "Treaty Between Canada and the United States of America Relating to Cooperative Development of the Water Resources of the Columbia River Basin." Under its terms, a series of dams would be built on the Columbia, principally to assist in flood control and power generation. These objectives do not seem unusual and the parties to the treaty were friendly countries sharing the longest undefended border in the world (and much else besides). Yet the treaty's negotiation and its impact were

controversial. Evidence of the treaty's contentiousness includes the length of time it took to negotiate the treaty (20 years); the fact that it was signed not once but twice (first in 1961 and again in 1964); and the fact that a second related agreement or treaty was needed in Canada, between the federal government and its provincial counterpart in British Columbia. It is also worth bearing in mind that the treaty was seen very differently in Canada than it was in the United States. [File 10474: Full Text >](#)

Columbia River Treaty -- Planning, Negotiation, and Implementation The Columbia River Basin encompasses nearly 700,000 square miles in the United States and Canada. The river's main stem and several of its tributaries have their headwaters in eastern British Columbia. Additional tributaries drain parts of Montana, Idaho, Wyoming, Nevada, Utah, Oregon, and Washington. As the U.S. government and private companies began to build dams to develop the river for navigation, power generation, and flood control in the 1930s, it became apparent that it would be difficult to fully capture and regulate the potential of the Columbia without making use of reservoir sites in the upper reaches of the basin, particularly those on the rivers to the north of the international border in British Columbia. Nearly two decades of study and negotiation over sharing the costs and benefits of upper-river storage began in 1944, culminating in the Columbia River Treaty, signed by Canada and the United States in 1961. When the treaty was ratified in 1964, it provided the framework for transforming the river basin into a manageable system that could be fully utilized for power generation, irrigation, and navigation, while eliminating most flooding. The treaty has been widely recognized as a model for cooperative management of trans-boundary water resources, but it has also been criticized for its lack of environmental protections and for the effects that dams and reservoirs have had on communities they displaced or disrupted. [File 10461: Full Text >](#)

Vanport Flood begins on Columbia River on May 30, 1948. On May 30, 1948, the Vanport Flood begins on the Columbia River. Named and most widely remembered for the town that it washes out just north of Portland, Oregon, the flood will crest twice, at 29.95 feet on June 1 and at 29.975 feet on June 14 at Portland, and will not recede for some 20 days. Heavy winter snowfall, a cooler than average spring, and heavy rainfall combined with warm temperatures in late May combine to send raging torrents of water down the Columbia. Running at twice its average spring volume, the river and its equally overflowing tributaries overwhelm levees and flood numerous communities and thousands of acres of farmland in British Columbia, Montana, Idaho, Washington, and Oregon. When the water recedes in late June, the flood waters will have killed at least 50 people, caused about \$102 million in damages, and spurred interest in building flood control dams on the Columbia. [File 10473: Full Text >](#)

p. 309 – **Bonneville Dam**

Bonneville Dam officially goes into service on June 6, 1938. On June 6, 1938, the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers officially places Bonneville Dam on the Columbia River into service. Bonneville is a run-of-the-river dam that will generate more than a million kilowatts of electricity, allow passage of shipping up and down the river, prevent flooding, and permit the migration of salmon. The dam will give its name to the Bonneville Power Administration created to distribute hydroelectric power produced by Columbia River dams. [File 7823: Full Text >](#)

p. 310 – **soup kitchens**

Seattle's Union Gospel Mission opens on August 21, 1932. On August 21, 1932, Seattle's Union Gospel Mission, with the support of several local churches, begins its efforts to provide food and spiritual sustenance to the city's growing population of homeless men. Spurred into action by the devastation of the Great Depression, the churches sponsor food drives to support the mission's program to feed the hungry. In the first year alone, and on a budget of less than \$1,500, meals are provided to more than 18,000 men. The mission stays true to its Christian roots, and each meal is served with a generous portion of gospel teaching.

[File 9259: Full Text >](#)

p. 311 – Washington Commonwealth Federation (WCF)

Pettus, Terry (1904-1984) Terry Pettus was a progressive-minded newspaper reporter who became Washington state's first member of the American Newspaper Guild. He was a key organizer of the Seattle chapter of the Guild, which in 1936 organized the first strike to force a Hearst paper (the *Seattle Post-Intelligencer*) to recognize the union. When the United States entered World War II, Pettus tried to enlist, but was rejected because he was at the time editor of the *Washington New Dealer* and as such considered essential to the war effort. (Later, in the Cold War era, he was imprisoned for being editor of this very paper.) From 1938 to 1958, his social activism -- for unions, against racial discrimination, for better housing and the rights of poor and working people -- found a home in the Communist Party. When he left the Party in 1958, he and his wife Berta went to live in a houseboat on Lake Union and became involved in the effort to clean up the lake. On March 7, 1982, Seattle Mayor Charles Royer (b. 1939) declared a Terry Pettus day. [File 2682: Full Text >](#)

Liberal-left Washington Commonwealth Federation is founded on June 8, 1935. On June 8, 1935, the liberal-left Washington Commonwealth Federation (WCF) is founded in Seattle as a coalition of groups to work for political and economic reform during the Great Depression. The WCF combines the unemployed with organized labor and liberals of the Democratic Party, mostly from the Puget Sound region. The WCF's first program is production-for-use instead of profit. Not inaccurately derided as a Communist Party front for its pro-Soviet positions, the WCF was also a political party for the city of Seattle, and the left wing and New Deal faction of the Democratic Party. [File 2722: Full Text >](#)

Washington Commonwealth Federation disbands on March 18, 1945. On March 18, 1945, 200 delegates from 66 organizations meet at the Eagle's Aerie Room in Seattle and dissolve the left-wing Washington Commonwealth Federation. The organization is deemed to have "fulfilled its historical anti-fascist role as an independent organization ..." The WCF was organized in 1935 by jobless groups in Seattle, advocates of Technocracy, members of the Democratic Party, and organized labor to work through the Democratic Party for political and economic reform. [File 2721: Full Text >](#)

p. 311 – Unemployed Citizens League (UCL)

Unemployed Citizens League marchers meet police and vigilantes in Olympia on March 2, 1933. On March 2, 1933, 1,200 unemployed men from Seattle meet 800 police and vigilantes in Olympia. The protesters want the legislature to assess higher taxes on the rich, to end foreclosures, and to provide hot meals for their children. They demand that the city of Olympia "make every possible preparation for caring for and protecting the marchers." The city commissioners refuse and warn that the marchers enter Olympia "at their own risk" (Newell, 372). [File 5107: Full Text >](#)

p. 312-3 – West Coast Longshoremen's Strike of 1934

West Coast Waterfront Strike of 1934 Along with every other major West Coast port, Seattle's harbor was paralyzed from May 9 to July 31, 1934, by one of the most important and bitter labor strikes of the twentieth century. The struggle pitted the International Longshoremen's Association (ILA) against steamship owners, police, and hostile public officials. Coastal confrontations with police cost seven strikers their lives, including Seattle ILA leader Shelvy Daffron. A King County Sheriff's Special Deputy was also killed in a downtown Seattle melee. The arbitrated settlement firmly established the rights of waterfront workers nationwide. [File 1391: Full Text >](#)

Longshoremen and maritime workers strike West Coast and Seattle on May 9, 1934. On May 9, 1934, 1,500 Seattle Longshoremen join 12,500 other maritime workers in closing every seaport between San Diego and Juneau. It is the first industry-wide strike on the West Coast. The strike continues until July 31 when the Longshoremen vote to turn the dispute over to federal arbitration. [File 1278: Full Text >](#)

King County Sheriff's Special Deputy Steve S. Watson dies in street brawl during Longshoremen's strike on July 9, 1934. On July 9, 1934, King County Sheriff's Special Deputy Steve S. Watson dies in a street brawl during a Longshoremen's strike. Watson is one of eight men killed during the strike, which closed West Coast ports for 83 days. [File 3762: Full Text >](#)

Longshoremen return to work, ending major West Coast waterfront strike, on July 31, 1934. On July 31, 1934, West Coast longshoremen return to work after agreeing to an arbitrated settlement, thus ending one of the most important and bitter labor strikes of the twentieth century. The subsequent settlement results in a victory for the International Longshoremen's Association -- union recognition, wage increases, and union control of waterfront hiring halls. [File 2661: Full Text >](#)

p. 312-3 – **Pacific Northwest Lumber Strike of 1935**

p. 314 – **World War II**

World War II Home Front on Puget Sound Fearing a second world war, the United States began to build up its armed forces in the late 1930s, helping to revitalize the Depression-becalmed economy of the Puget Sound region. The area's aircraft and ship builders shifted into high gear after the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor on December 7, 1941. Every sector of business and domestic life was affected by the war effort. The society underwent dramatic change as women took the place of men on production lines, thousands of Japanese Americans were interned, and equal numbers of African Americans migrated to the Northwest in search of defense jobs. Historian James R. Warren surveys the scale and legacies of our area's mobilization during World War II in this essay, adapted with permission from the *Puget Sound Business Journal*. [File 1664: Full Text >](#)

United States drops atomic bomb on Hiroshima on August 6, 1945. On August 6, 1945, the United States drops an atomic bomb on Hiroshima, the first of two such dropped on Japan this week. At 2:45 a.m. local time, on August 6, 1945, a B-29 Superfortress called *Enola Gay*, a warplane designed by the Boeing Airplane Company and modified at the company's Wichita, Kansas, plant, lifts off with two escort B-29s from Tinian, a small island in the Marianas. The planes fly 1,500 miles to Japan and the *Enola Gay* drops the bomb. [File 1351: Full Text >](#)

Upon the U.S. bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki on August 6 and 9, 1945, Richland residents discover the truth about what they were producing at Hanford. On August 6 and August 9, 1945, upon the bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki, the residents of Richland discover the truth about what they were producing at Hanford. The news of the atomic bombing is accompanied by another bombshell for the residents of Washington state. They learn that key atom bomb components were produced at the super-secret Hanford Engineer Works just north of Richland. Many Richland residents only now learn exactly what they had been making since 1943. [File 8454: Full Text](#)

Airmen from McChord Field take part in Doolittle Raid against Japan on April 18, 1942. On April 18, 1942, airmen from Washington's McChord Field, who have volunteered for the dangerous mission, launch bombers from an aircraft carrier to attack the Japanese home islands. The attack, made soon after America's entry into World War

II, becomes known as the Doolittle Raid after its flight leader, Lieutenant Colonel James H. "Jimmy" Doolittle (1896-1993). All 16 aircraft on the raid are lost. Of the 80 raiders, five die in crashes. Japanese forces capture eight men and execute three of them. One of the captured aircrew dies in captivity. The survivors will gather every year to remember their fellow airmen; in 2013, with four raiders surviving, three will meet for a final toast to the mission and the memory of their comrades. [File 10341: Full Text >](#)

p. 314 – **naval installations** (PS Naval Shipyards, Sand Point Naval Air Station, Keyport Torpedo Station, and Whidbey Island Naval Air Station) = these essays should have naval installations as keywords

Sand Point Naval Air Station: 1920-1970 Under a variety of official designations, Sand Point, a peninsula in north Seattle that juts into Lake Washington, served for almost 50 years as an air base, aviation training center, and aircraft repair depot for the U.S. Navy. Growing eventually to more than 400 acres, the Sand Point Naval Air Station hosted at its peak during World War II more than 5,600 Naval personnel, more than 2,400 civilian workers, and hundreds of aircraft. Units trained at Sand Point participated in some of the critical battles in the Pacific war. [File 2249: Full Text >](#)

Port of Keyport is formed by special election on July 19, 1923. On July 19, 1923, Keyport residents vote in a special election to establish the Port of Keyport. The Port will construct a public dock to use as a landing for the "Mosquito Fleet," the "swarm" of small, privately run ferries that serve as the dominant form of transportation for Kitsap County residents until the late 1920s. The new dock will replace a wharf completed in 1896 that became property of the U.S. Navy in 1914. In 1970, the Port will replace Keyport's public dock with a smaller dock at the same site. In 2011, the Port of Keyport maintains a small marina and boat launch on the Keyport waterfront. [File 9727: Full Text >](#)

Naval Air Station Whidbey Island is formally commissioned on September 21, 1942. On September 21, 1942, the U.S. Navy formally commissions Naval Air Station Whidbey Island. The airfield, located near Oak Harbor and soon to be named Ault Field, serves as a base to train fighter and patrol bomber crews. The operation also includes a seaplane base on Forbes (Maylor's) Point on Crescent Bay where Catalina flying boats defending Puget Sound refuel and rearm. NAS Whidbey will become Navy's principal air facility north of San Francisco and west of Chicago. [File 8228: Full Text >](#)

World War II Home Front on Puget Sound Fearing a second world war, the United States began to build up its armed forces in the late 1930s, helping to revitalize the Depression-becalmed economy of the Puget Sound region. The area's aircraft and ship builders shifted into high gear after the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor on December 7, 1941. Every sector of business and domestic life was affected by the war effort. The society underwent dramatic change as women took the place of men on production lines, thousands of Japanese Americans were interned, and equal numbers of African Americans migrated to the Northwest in search of defense jobs. Historian James R. Warren surveys the scale and legacies of our area's mobilization during World War II in this essay, adapted with permission from the *Puget Sound Business Journal*. [File 1664: Full Text >](#)

Wellspring Archives: World War II Years, Parts 1 and 2 This People's History is based on the early records of Wellspring Family Services, a private, non-profit organization helping families and children in Seattle and King County overcome life's challenges. Founded in 1892 as the Bureau of Associated Charities, Wellspring Family Services has operated under a succession of names. At the time of the events described in this essay, it was called the Family Society of Seattle. This essay describes how the agency's services shifted and expanded during World War II. The organization's services have changed over the years, but have always centered on a commitment to a stronger, healthier community. These archival records offer glimpses into aspects of Seattle history not well documented elsewhere, examining societal attitudes toward poverty, need, illness, and addiction -- all of which have altered considerably since Wellspring's early days. These are a pair in a series entitled "Out of the Archives," and

appeared in May and July 2012 in Wellspring's monthly internal newsletter, *The Fiddlehead*. It was written by Wellspring Family Services executive assistant Deborah Townsend. [File 10112: Full Text >](#)

p. 314 – **other military installations** (Fort Lewis, Fort Lawton, Paine Field, Boeing Field, McChord Air Force Base, Geiger Field in Spokane, Fairchild Air Force Base in Spokane, Hanford Nuclear/ Atomic Reservation near Richland, Naval Reserve Air Training Station in Pasco, Yakima Firing Range, and Larson Air Base in Moses Lake.) these essays should have military installations as keywords (see 10414, 10416, 1-111, 10131, 10127, 10148, 10693)

Fort Lewis, Part 2, 1927-2008 Located in Pierce County south of Tacoma, the permanent Fort Lewis went up between 1927 and 1939 with the construction of stately brick buildings in an attractive layout. In 1939 the permanent construction program ended and temporary wood buildings then became commonplace. During World War II new compounds were erected at North Fort Lewis, Northeast Fort Lewis, and South Fort Lewis and within the main cantonment area. Training and preparedness intensified leading up to and throughout World War II. Colonel Dwight D. Eisenhower (1890-1969), the future general and president, served at Fort Lewis from 1940 to 1941. The post functioned to train soldiers for other wars, Korea, Vietnam, and the Global War on Terrorism. Since World War II, the fort has modernized, but retains its historic core of the original permanent buildings. [File 8493: Full Text >](#)

Fort Lawton is established on February 9, 1900. On February 9, 1900, the U.S. Army designates the military installation on Magnolia Bluff, on the present-day (1999) site of Seattle's Discovery Park, as Fort Lawton. It becomes part of the system of defenses protecting Puget Sound from naval attack. The fort is named after Major General Henry Ware Lawton (1843-1899), a veteran of the Civil War and of the Indian Wars, who was killed in action in the Philippines. [File 1757: Full Text >](#)

Fort Lawton to Discovery Park During the 1890s Seattle, to boost its economy, actively sought an army post. The War Department also desired an army presence and encouraged the City to provide free land. The land was conveyed in 1898, construction began, and the new post was named in honor of General Henry Lawton (d. 1899), recently killed in action in the Philippines. Seattle expected it to be a major installation, but it remained a small post. The post is best known for events other than military accomplishments: a 1944 soldier raid on Italian prisoner camp, a court martial with injustices corrected more than 60 years later, a 1970 Indian demonstration and occupation, and struggles to convert the fort into Discovery Park. [File 8772: Full Text >](#)

Paine Field (Snohomish County) Built in 1936 and funded by the Works Progress Administration, Everett's Paine Field was originally planned as a commercial airport for Snohomish County. World War II changed the focus when it became a military airfield (1941-1946) and again in 1951 during the Korean Conflict. Paine Field saw mixed military and commercial use until the mid-1960s when Snohomish County took over full management of the site and opened it for new commercial development. In 1966 the Boeing Corporation chose adjacent property to build the 747 and set the direction for aviation commerce at the site for decades. Paine Field has developed into an important aviation and commercial center that has included Alaska Airlines, the Willard Flying School, Curtiss-Wright Flight Systems, Crown Aviation, Honeywell, and Goodrich Aviation Technical Services. Today (2007) Paine Field is managed by Snohomish County and is bordered by Everett and Mukilteo. The airport was named Paine Field in 1941 to honor a local World War I Air Corps pilot, Second Lieutenant Topliff Olin Paine (1893-1922). [File 8266: Full Text >](#)

McChord Field, McChord Air Force Base, and Joint Base Lewis-McChord: Part 2 McChord Air Force Base (now part of Joint Base Lewis-McChord), located in Pierce County south of Tacoma, has served airlift and air-defense functions since World War II. Its major role has been airlift, moving troops and equipment to combat zones. Airlift planes have also carried out many humanitarian missions. In addition, McChord performs a significant role in air defense. It has been home to air-defense warning and command systems, and fighter aircraft stationed here have

defended the Northwest's air space. In 2010 McChord Air Force Base was merged with Fort Lewis to create Joint Base Lewis-McChord. [File 9937: Full Text >](#)

p. 315 – **Indian Reorganization Act/ Wheeler-Howard Act**

Wheeler-Howard Act (Indian Reorganization Act) shifts U.S. policy toward Native American right to self-determination on June 18, 1934. On June 18, 1934, the Wheeler-Howard Act, also known as the Indian Reorganization Act, reverses the U. S. policy favoring Indian assimilation and becomes the basis for United States policies that recognize the right of self-determination for Native Americans. The law curtails the land allotment system, permits tribes to establish formal governments with limited powers, and allows the formation of corporations to manage tribal resources. Funds are authorized for educational assistance and to assist tribes in purchasing tribal lands. [File 2599: Full Text >](#)

p. 315 – **Celilo Falls**

Native Americans begin "Ceremony of Tears" for Kettle Falls on June 14, 1940. On June 14, 1940, Native Americans from throughout the Northwest gather at Kettle Falls for a three-day "Ceremony of Tears" to mourn the loss of their ancestral fishing grounds, soon to be flooded by Grand Coulee Dam on the Columbia River in Central Washington. [File 7276: Full Text >](#)

Celilo Falls disappears in hours after The Dalles Dam floodgates are closed on March 10, 1957. On March 10, 1957, the massive steel and concrete floodgates of newly completed The Dalles Dam on the Columbia River are closed, and within hours Celilo Falls, approximately 13 miles upstream, disappears beneath the rising waters. The falls formed a rough horseshoe shape across the river, and nearby are two ancient Indian villages -- Wyam, on the Oregon side of the river, and S'kin on the other shore -- which also disappear into the reservoir behind the dam. Tribes from near and far have for thousands of years come here to fish, trade, and socialize, and the loss of the falls and downstream waters is a heavy blow to traditional Native culture. Tribal members are among the 10,000 people who gather to witness the opening of the dam and the submergence of Celilo Falls, celebrated by some and considered by others a heartbreaking occasion. [File 10010: Full Text >](#)

p. 315 – **German POW's in Washington**

Fort Lewis Prisoners of War (World War II) During World War II, Fort Lewis in Pierce County held about 4,000 German prisoners of war. The POWs were confined there between 1942 and 1946. A few died from illness or from their war wounds, but most enjoyed food and living conditions far better than they had in the deserts of North Africa or in the battlefields of Europe. International Red Cross inspectors judged their prison conditions strict but fair. [File 5631: Full Text >](#)

p. 317-8 - **Todd Shipyard**

Harbor Island, at the time the world's largest artificial island, is completed in 1909. In 1909, the Puget Sound Bridge and Dredging Co. finishes building Harbor Island with dredge spoils from the Duwamish River and soil from the Jackson Hill and Dearborn Street regrades. It is the largest artificial island in the world at approximately 350 acres. Harbor Island will lose this distinction in 1938 to Treasure Island in San Francisco Bay, but will increase in

size and surpass Treasure Island once again in 1967. Today, at least two artificial islands are larger. (In the Port of Kobe, Japan, Port Island, completed in 1981, is 1,064 acres, and Rokko Island, completed in 1992, is 1,432 acres.) [File 3631: Full Text >](#)

Port of Tacoma sees launch of Todd Shipyards' freighter *Cape Alava* on August 3, 1940. On August 3, 1940, the Todd Shipyards Corporation launches the C-1 freighter *Cape Alava* from the company's Port of Tacoma shipyard on the Blair Waterway. It is the first ship built at the Todd Tacoma yard since the facility was shuttered in 1925 following a decline in shipbuilding after World War I. Leading up to World War II, demand for shipbuilding increases, and Todd rebuilds and reopens its Tacoma yard in 1940, operated by a subsidiary first named the Seattle-Tacoma Shipbuilding Corporation and then Todd-Pacific Shipyards Inc. Over the next six years, Todd's Tacoma yard employs 33,000 men and women and builds scores of ships, the vast majority for the war effort. But in a repeat of Todd's 1920s experience, the company's shipbuilding prospects shrink following the war. The company ends its Port of Tacoma operations for good in 1946, swapping its shipyard to the U.S. Navy for land adjacent to the company's Seattle ship-repair plant on Harbor Island. [File 8734: Full Text >](#)

***Suquamish*, first diesel-powered passenger ship built in the United States, is launched on April 23, 1914.** On April 23, 1914, the *Suquamish* is launched in Seattle. Built for the Kitsap County Transportation Company for service on Puget Sound, the *Suquamish* is the first diesel-powered passenger vessel built in the United States, and the second diesel-powered ship of any kind built on the Pacific Coast, following the launch of the cannery tender *Warrior* in Seattle two months earlier. [File 765: Full Text >](#)

Fire breaks out at Todd Pacific Shipyards (Harbor Island, Seattle) on November 28, 1968. On Thanksgiving Day, November 28, 1968, fire breaks out under Repair Pier 4 at Todd Pacific Shipyards on Harbor Island, endangering the Naval vessel USS *Lockwood* (DE 1064) and two commercial vessels, the SS *John Weyerhaeuser* and the MV *Chevron Liege*. Some 500 firefighters and shipyard workers battle the four-alarm fire for 14 hours before bringing it under control. While fighting the stubborn blaze, one firefighter is killed and 28 others are injured, 11 of whom are hospitalized. Damage to the facility is estimated at \$250,000. It is the fifth major fire at Todd Pacific Shipyards in six years and described as one of the longest and most arduous in the history of the Seattle Fire Department. [File 10043: Full Text >](#)

p. 317-9 – Kaiser Shipyard

Kaiser shipyard in Vancouver launches its first escort aircraft carrier on April 5, 1943. On April 5, 1943, the Kaiser shipyard in Vancouver, Clark County, launches the *Alazon Bay* (later renamed *Casablanca*), the first of some 50 escort carriers the yard produces in little over a year. All told, the Vancouver shipyard, opened in early 1942, turns out more than 140 ships and two drydocks during World War II. [File 5266: Full Text >](#)

p. 317 – Boeing Airline Company

Boeing and Early Aviation in Seattle, 1909-1919 Seattle residents saw their first flying machine on June 27, 1908, a balloon flown by L. Guy Mecklem (1882-1973) from West Seattle's Luna Park, and saw another flying machine, a dirigible, in 1909 during the Alaska-Yukon-Pacific Exposition. Charles Hamilton demonstrated the city's first airplane the following year. Herb Munter (1897-1970), a self-educated engineer, was building his own aircraft on Harbor Island by 1915. His efforts attracted the interest of William E. Boeing (1881-1956) and Navy Lt. Conrad Westervelt, who hired Munter to help them build their first airplane, the B&W, in 1916. America's entry into World War I in 1917 lifted the new Boeing Airplane Co. to dizzying heights. Peace two years later sent it into a near-fatal nose dive. [File 5369: Full Text >](#)

The Boeing Company wins NASA contract for lunar rover on October 28, 1969. On October 28, 1969, barely three months after Apollo 11 carried the first astronauts to land on the moon, The Boeing Company wins a \$19.6 million contract to design and build a motorized "moon buggy" that will give future astronauts far greater mobility on the lunar surface. Science-fiction writers and far-sighted scientists and engineers have been speculating about what such a vehicle would look like since early in the twentieth century, but it will fall to Boeing to move the concept from speculation to reality. The company does so in the remarkably short span of 17 months. Despite running massively over budget, the first fully operational lunar dune buggy, Rover 1, is ready to fly to the moon when the Apollo 15 mission blasts off from NASA's Kennedy Space Center in Florida atop a Saturn V rocket on the morning of July 26, 1971. On board are astronauts David R. Scott (b. 1932), Alfred M. Worden (b. 1932), and James B. Irwin (1930-1991), and folded away in a compartment on the side of the lunar lander is Boeing's Lunar Roving Vehicle. On July 30, 1971, Scott and Irwin will become the first humans to traverse the lunar surface on wheels, gleefully kicking up clouds of moon dust as they range far from their landing site. [File 10045: Full Text >](#)

Boeing rolls out first 747 Jumbo Jet in Everett on September 30, 1968. On September 30, 1968, Boeing rolls out the first 747 "Jumbo Jet" in Everett, Washington. The aircraft, originally designed to haul both cargo and passengers for Pan Am Airways, was more than twice the size of the Boeing 707. In order to assemble the flying behemoth, Boeing built the world's largest structure by volume, enclosing 291 million cubic feet, at Paine Field in Everett. [File 1565: Full Text >](#)

p. 317 – **ALCOA**

Alcoa plant at Vancouver produces the first aluminum in the West on September 23, 1940. On September 23, 1940, the Aluminum Company of American (Alcoa) plant at Vancouver, Clark County, produces the first aluminum to be manufactured in the West. The new plant, which uses hydro power from the dams recently constructed on the Columbia River, helps boost Vancouver's economy following the depression of the 1930s. Within little more than a year, the aluminum it produces is being devoted to the effort to win World War II. [File 5265: Full Text >](#)

p. 317 – **Hanford Nuclear Reservation**

Hanford's N Reactor Hanford's N Reactor, designed to produce both plutonium for weapons and electricity for the public, was the ninth and final reactor to be constructed at the Hanford Nuclear Reservation, located along the Columbia River in Benton County. Washington's senators and local politicians lobbied intensely for the reactor out of fear that jobs would be lost as the eight older reactors (built during World War II for the production of nuclear bombs) were being shut down. The N Reactor began producing plutonium in 1963, and its cogeneration of electricity began in 1964, marking the beginning of the civilian nuclear industry. The reactor's design soon attracted public criticism. Although the N Reactor's recirculation of cooling water resulted in much less radioactivity reaching the Columbia River than was the case with the eight earlier reactors, the N Reactor had no containment building to prevent the spread of radiation in the event of an accident. After serious nuclear accidents at Three Mile Island, in Pennsylvania (1979), and at Chernobyl, in the Ukraine (1986), the N Reactor was shut down for good in 1986. [File 10702: Full Text >](#)

Richland -- Thumbnail History The city of Richland, one of the Tri-Cities along with Pasco and Kennewick, is on a site near the confluence of the Yakima River and the Columbia River that has been occupied for at least 11,000 years. People of the Wanapum, Walla Walla, and Yakama tribes fished and hunted in the area and established a small village called Chemna. The first white explorer to visit the area was Capt. William Clark (1770-1838) of the Lewis and Clark Expedition, who canoed up the Columbia to the mouth of the Yakima. The first cattle ranchers arrived in the 1860s, but settlement did not begin in earnest until the 1890s when farmers began to irrigate in the lower Yakima Valley. One of those farmers was Nelson Rich, after whom the small settlement was named in 1905. The town was incorporated in 1910, yet for decades remained a tiny agricultural village. When World War II

arrived, Richland had only 247 residents -- but then in 1943, the federal government acquired Richland (along with Hanford and a vast surrounding area) as part of secret wartime project to build an atomic bomb. By 1944, the population had boomed to 11,000, almost entirely workers on the Hanford project. By 1950, Richland had 21,809 residents and was nearly double the size of nearby Pasco and Kennewick. In 1958, the federal government relinquished ownership of Richland and it was incorporated as a first-class city. Today many Richland residents continue to work at Hanford, in environmental cleanup, yet Richland has diversified its economy into technology, medicine, education, and transportation. Its population as of 2007 was 45,070, and it is part of the Tri-Cities metropolitan area of 168,850. [File 8450: Full Text >](#)

A federal judge signs the Order of Condemnation for 625 square miles of land in the Hanford and Richland areas on February 23, 1943. On February 23, 1943, a federal judge signs the Order of Condemnation for a huge area of land bordering the Columbia River near Richland and Hanford. This paves the way for the construction of the Hanford Engineer Works, part of the super-secret Manhattan Project. Thousands of residents will be evacuated to make way for a huge influx of new workers who will soon be working on manufacturing plutonium and uranium for atomic bombs. [File 8451: Full Text >](#)

Construction of massive plutonium production complex at Hanford begins in March 1943. In March 1943, the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers begins construction of the massive, and top secret, Hanford Engineer Works along the Columbia River in Benton County. In less than two years, a construction crew that peaks at 51,000 workers constructs three nuclear reactors and many other facilities, along with a new "government city" at Richland. Plutonium produced at the Hanford reactors is used in the first ever atomic explosion at Alamogordo, New Mexico, and in the atomic bomb dropped on Nagasaki, Japan. [File 5363: Full Text >](#)

Hanford Engineer Works Village, a federal project to house workers on the Manhattan Project, breaks ground in Richland on March 22, 1943. On March 22, 1943, ground is broken at Richland, Benton County, for the Hanford Engineer Works Village, a federally sponsored planned community to house workers and their families at the Hanford Nuclear Reservation. The site is chosen because it is sufficiently remote from population centers to preserve the secrecy of this part of the highly secret Manhattan Project, yet close enough to Hanford (15-30 miles to various parts of the reservation) to allow workers in Richland an easy bus commute. The Manhattan Engineering District (MED) of the Army Corps of Engineers selects the DuPont Company to construct both its industrial facilities at Hanford and the housing village at Richland. A successful and prolific Spokane architect, Swedish-born Gustav Albin Pehrson (d. 1968), is chosen to plan and complete the Richland village, which will eventually house nearly 16,000 residents. Pehrson initially designs nine different house types of various sizes and configurations to which he assigns letters of the alphabet. Some later residents will live in prefabricated houses not of Pehrson's design. Eventually there will be 2,500 permanent housing units, many still in use today. [File 9059: Full Text >](#)

p. 317 – **agriculture in World War II (wartime economy)**

p. 317 – **timber industry in World War II (wartime economy)**

p. 317 – **mining and fishing industry in World War II (wartime economy)**

p. 318 – **shipbuilding industry in World War II (wartime economy)**

Washington Naval Depots (World War II) Washington's excellent ports and fine railroad network made the state a good choice for siting large naval supply depots during World War II. Enormous depots were built at Pier 91 in Seattle and near Spokane, used to supply needed war materiel to Alaska and the Pacific. Naval ammunition depots were built at Bremerton, Bangor, and Indian Island to support the fleet and warships that came to the Puget Sound

Navy Yard. Most of the depots closed following the war, but several remain in active military use, and the Spokane depot survives as an industrial park. [File 10175: Full Text >](#)

p. 319 – **Henry Kaiser (wartime economy)**

p. 319 – **Kaiser Shipyard (wartime economy)**

Kaiser shipyard in Vancouver launches its first escort aircraft carrier on April 5, 1943. On April 5, 1943, the Kaiser shipyard in Vancouver, Clark County, launches the *Alazon Bay* (later renamed *Casablanca*), the first of some 50 escort carriers the yard produces in little over a year. All told, the Vancouver shipyard, opened in early 1942, turns out more than 140 ships and two drydocks during World War II. [File 5266: Full Text >](#)

Port of Tacoma demolishes landmark Kaiser smokestack on July 2, 2006. On July 2, 2006, the 500-foot Kaiser Aluminum smokestack -- 38-year fixture on the Tacoma waterfront -- is demolished to make room for Port of Tacoma expansion of marine terminals along the Blair Waterway. The Kaiser Aluminum Corporation produced aluminum at the site from 1947 to 2000, adding the smokestack to its operations in 1968. Outmoded and aging facilities -- along with labor strife in 1998-2000 and spiking energy costs in 2000 -- led to the plant's closing in June 2000. Kaiser pointed to a weak economy, low aluminum prices, and litigation related to asbestos claims when it sought bankruptcy protection in 2002. The company would never reopen its Tacoma smelter. On April 14, 2003, the Port of Tacoma officially took over Kaiser's 96-acre site and began plans to raze 75 buildings, including the smokestack, thus clearing ground for additional terminal capacity at the port. [File 8671: Full Text >](#)

p. 320 – **aircraft industry (wartime economy)**

World War II: Civilian Airports Adapted for Military Use Before and during World War II the military purchased or leased a number of municipal or local airports in Washington for use as military airfields. The army and navy expanded runways, built hangars, and made other improvements. During the war the airfields served as fighter bases, bomber-training facilities, and patrol bases. At the end of the war the airfields were returned to their previous owners for use as civilian airports again. [File 10110: Full Text >](#)

p. 320 – **Boeing “Flying Fortress”**

Boeing Flying Fortress B-17 prototype takes her maiden flight on July 28, 1935. On July 28, 1935, the Model 299 prototype for the Boeing B-17 Flying Fortress takes off from Boeing Field on her maiden flight. The four-engine behemoth roars down the runway and, as it climbs into the air, is greeted by the rising sun over the Cascade Mountains, which glints off its polished wings. One reporter dubs it a "veritable flying fortress." The 299 will go on to set a new speed record on August 20 by flying 2,000 miles nonstop from Seattle to Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio, at an average speed of 233 miles per hour. However, the airplane crashes during later tests. [File 2004: Full Text >](#)

p. 320 – **Boeing B-29 Superfortress**

Boeing B-29 Superfortress Bomber Famed for its World War II exploits, Boeing's Superfortress was conceived before the war. The B-29 was born near the war's midpoint, flying on September 21, 1942, built and employed in

large numbers during the conflict. It successfully performed several roles during 15 months of combat, including bomber, minelayer, photoreconnaissance, search and rescue, and electronic warfare. B-29s fought in the Pacific theater, flying mostly from small islands with the world's largest airbases, over vast stretches of ocean, to enemy targets that could be more than 2,000 miles distant. Known as the only aircraft to drop atomic bombs in war, the B-29 contributed a major share to the Allied victory over Japan with its firebomb attacks and mine laying missions in the waters surrounding the home islands. [File 3828: Full Text >](#)

Boeing XB-29 makes its maiden flight on September 21, 1942. On September 21, 1942, the Boeing XB-29 makes its maiden flight. The B-29 bomber was designed and manufactured in the midst of World War II. B-29s fought in the Pacific theater, flying mostly from small islands with the world's largest airbases, over vast stretches of ocean to enemy targets that could be more than 2,000 miles distant. The B-29 was the only aircraft ever to drop atomic bombs in war. [File 4245: Full Text >](#)

p. 322 – **Pearl Harbor**

Secret Fort Ward (Bainbridge Island) radio station, Station S, intercepts key message on December 7, 1941.

At 1:28 a.m. on December 7, 1941, a secret United States Navy radio station, Station S, Bainbridge Island, intercepts a message from Tokyo to the Japanese embassy in Washington, D.C. The message instructs the Japanese ambassador to break off ongoing peace negotiations with the United States, but its secret purpose is to alert the ambassador that Japanese forces are poised to attack Pearl Harbor. [File 9670: Full Text >](#)

United States declares war on Japan on December 8, 1941. Just after 9:30 a.m. on December 8, 1941, on a national radio broadcast, U.S. President Franklin D. Roosevelt (1882-1945) goes before a joint session of the U.S. Congress and begins with the following words: "Yesterday, December 7, 1941 -- a date which will live in infamy -- the United States of America was suddenly and deliberately attacked by naval and air forces of the Empire of Japan." The president requests a declaration of war against Japan. Radios all over Washington state are turned on to his speech. The day before, Japan had attacked Pearl Harbor.

[File 5635: Full Text >](#)

p. 323 – terms “**Nisei**” and “**issei**”

Japanese Americans in Seattle and King County For more than a hundred years, Japanese Americans have made significant contributions to the commercial, cultural, and social history of Seattle and King County. Early immigrants arrived just before the turn of the century to work on railroads and in sawmills and canneries, eking out a living while enduring discrimination in immigration, employment, and housing. Others turned to farming, converting land covered with marshes and tree stumps into productive cropland. [File 231: Full Text >](#)

Nikkei Concerns (Seattle) Nikkei Concerns is a Seattle nonprofit organization dedicated to the welfare of the elderly Japanese American community in the Pacific Northwest. Its services are founded on quality care, respect, trust, and kimochi (good feelings) for the Nikkei, Japanese emigrants to America or their descendants. Its stated mission is to enrich and support the lives of elders and meet their needs in a way that honors and respects Nikkei culture and values. Under its umbrella of care are a nursing home, an assisted-living home, adult-education programs, and adult-daycare programs. It has become the second largest health care and educational organization for Japanese Americans and the general public, next to one in Los Angeles. [File 10349: Full Text >](#)

p. 323 – **Lt. General DeWitt**

World War II Japanese American Internment -- Seattle/King County The bombing of Pearl Harbor by Japan on December 7, 1941, set in motion a series of events and decisions that led to what has been called the worst violation of constitutional rights in American history: the expulsion and imprisonment of 110,000 persons of Japanese ancestry from the U.S. West Coast. [File 240: Full Text >](#)

p. 323, 325 – **Executive Order No. 9066**

FDR signs Executive Order 9066 on February 19, 1942. On February 19, 1942, U.S. President Franklin Roosevelt (1882-1945) signs Executive Order 9066, setting in motion the expulsion of 110,000 Japanese Americans from the West Coast to 10 inland prison camps. [File 310: Full Text >](#)

East Side Journal prints high school student Alice Grubner's essay on freedom on December 18, 1941. On December 18, 1941 -- slightly more than a week after the bombing of Pearl Harbor -- Kirkland's *East Side Journal* prints a short essay from Alice Grubner, a local teenager. Grubner's essay (reproduced in full) calls for clear thinking at a time when the country is gripped in fear, and warns of overreaction against Japanese American citizens. The *Journal's* editor, Bob Frank, prefaces the essay thusly: "The following article was written by Alice Grubner, student at Redmond high school. It is well written and contains a sentiment which is well worth remembering in these times." [File 2741: Full Text >](#)

Seattle School Board accepts the forced resignation of Japanese American teachers on February 27, 1942. On February 27, 1942, the Seattle School Board accepts the resignation of 27 employees who are Americans of Japanese ancestry. The young women have been pressured to resign by the school district, which in turn has been pressured by a committee led by Esther Sekor, a Gatewood Elementary School mother. The white mothers circulated a petition and received a lot of press. The Japanese American women were further pressured to resign by *Japanese American Courier* editor James Sakamoto, who insisted that they would be fired if they did not resign. [File 3642: Full Text >](#)

City of Seattle dismisses all employees of Japanese descent on March 20, 1942. On March 20, 1942, the City of Seattle dismisses five persons employed by the Department of Lighting because of their Japanese descent. The firings follow President Franklin D. Roosevelt's signing of Executive Order 9066, which sets in motion the expulsion of 110,000 Japanese Americans from the West Coast to 10 inland prison camps. Forty-two years later, in 1984, the City passes an ordinance which states that "in the interest of fairness, justice, and honor, The City of Seattle should make reparation to City employees of Japanese ancestry who were terminated, laid-off or dismissed from City employment pursuant to Executive Order No. 9066." [File 3637: Full Text >](#)

Bainbridge Island's Japanese American residents become the first to be interned under Executive Order 9066 on March 30, 1942. On March 30, 1942, the U.S. military removes 275 Japanese American residents from Bainbridge Island. The removal comes after Franklin Roosevelt's Executive Order 9066 gives the military the authority to intern anyone they consider "dangerous." The order set in motion the expulsion of 110,000 Japanese Americans from the West Coast to 10 inland prison camps, based on their ethnicity and heritage. None was accused of any crime or charged or convicted of any act of espionage or sabotage. Bainbridge Island's Japanese American residents were the first in the country to be removed, most likely because of the nearness of the Bremerton Navy Yard and other military installations. [File 8277: Full Text >](#)

Japanese Americans are ordered to evacuate Seattle on April 21, 1942. On Tuesday, April 21, 1942, "evacuation" announcements addressed to Japanese Americans are posted on Seattle telephone poles and bulletin boards. The community is ordered to leave the city in three groups on the following Tuesday, Thursday, and Friday. [File 311: Full Text >](#)

Seattle City Council passes Japanese American reparations ordinance on March 5, 1984. On March 5, 1984, the Seattle City Council passes Ordinance 111571, in reparation to municipal employees fired during World War II because of their Japanese ancestry. The ordinance is introduced by Council member Delores Sibonga (b. 1931) and states that "in the interest of fairness, justice and honor, The City of Seattle should make reparation to City employees of Japanese ancestry who were terminated, laid-off or dismissed from City employment pursuant to Executive Order No. 9066." The executive order, signed by U.S. President Franklin D. Roosevelt on February 19, 1942, forced 110,000 Japanese Americans to leave their West Coast homes and go to prison camps during World War II. [File 3640: Full Text >](#)

Government apologizes and awards redress checks to Japanese American centenarians in Seattle on October 14, 1990. On October 14, 1990, in Seattle's Nisei Veterans Hall, the United States government officially apologizes to five Japanese Americans, ages 100 and over, who had been unjustly incarcerated during the internment of West Coast Japanese Americans during World War II. During the ceremony, the five, Harry Nakagawa (100 years old), Kichisaburo Ishimitsu (103), Uta Wakamatsu (102), Shoichiro Katsuno (105), and Frank Yatsu (107) each receive, by way of redress, a \$20,000 check as required by the Civil Liberties Act (1988). The act requires that the oldest eligible individuals be paid first. [File 3646: Full Text >](#)

Kurose, Aki (1925-1998) Aki Kurose, Seattle teacher and peace activist, spent her adult life translating the lofty ideals of pacifism and social justice into practice. Her work spanned six decades and included housing desegregation campaigns, anti-war protests, peace curriculum development, and rebuilding housing in Hiroshima. Through her remarkable empathy for all people and dedication to her students, Kurose influenced many to work for peaceful solutions and an end to injustice, and to embrace differences. [File 9339: Full Text >](#)

Schmoe, Floyd W. (1895-2001) Floyd Schmoe's life, which more than spanned the twentieth century, was shaped by his love of nature and by his equally passionate commitment to helping those afflicted by war and injustice. A child of the Kansas prairie, Schmoe fell in love with the high mountains and inland seas of the Pacific Northwest where he lived most of his long life. He studied forest and marine ecology, became the first park naturalist at Mount Rainier National Park, headed a science academy, and lectured and wrote on science and nature. A Quaker, Schmoe was a lifelong peace activist -- his FBI file labeled him a "rabid pacifist." He gave up teaching and research to work full time aiding Japanese Americans interned during World War II. As a conscientious objector in World War I he had built homes for war refugees in France and a generation later he built homes for survivors of the atomic bombings of Hiroshima and Nagasaki. In his 90s, he traveled to Tashkent and poured concrete to help build a peace park there while leading the effort to create the Seattle Peace Park. [File 3876: Full Text >](#)

p. 323 – **Western Defense Zone (Japanese internment)**

p. 323 – **Executive Order No. 9102 (Japanese internment)**

p. 323 – **War Relocation Authority (Japanese internment)**

p. 323 - **Civilian Exclusion Order no. 5 (Japanese internment)**

p. 324 – **Military Area #1 (Japanese internment)**

p. 324 – **Camp Harmony**

Camp Harmony (Puyallup Assembly Center), 1942 The Puyallup Assembly Center, better known by the euphemism Camp Harmony, a name coined by an Army public-relations officer during construction in 1942, was

situated at the Western Washington fairgrounds in the heart of Puyallup, located in Pierce County. The assembly center was a temporary facility into which Japanese Americans, known as Nikkei, were forced to gather beginning in March 1942, following U.S. President Franklin Roosevelt's (1882-1945) Executive Order 9066, which set into motion the expulsion of 110,000 Japanese Americans from the West Coast. The mass expulsion forced some 7,500 people from Seattle and the rural areas around Tacoma into Camp Harmony, where they stayed in crowded conditions until their transfer to permanent "relocation centers" (inland prison camps). A key figure in these events was James Sakamoto (1903-1955), a newspaper publisher and a founder of the Japanese American Citizens League (JACL). [File 8748: Full Text >](#)

p. 324 – **Japanese removed from Bainbridge Island**

Bainbridge Island's Japanese American residents become the first to be interned under Executive Order 9066 on March 30, 1942. On March 30, 1942, the U.S. military removes 275 Japanese American residents from Bainbridge Island. The removal comes after Franklin Roosevelt's Executive Order 9066 gives the military the authority to intern anyone they consider "dangerous." The order set in motion the expulsion of 110,000 Japanese Americans from the West Coast to 10 inland prison camps, based on their ethnicity and heritage. None was accused of any crime or charged or convicted of any act of espionage or sabotage. Bainbridge Island's Japanese American residents were the first in the country to be removed, most likely because of the nearness of the Bremerton Navy Yard and other military installations. [File 8277: Full Text >](#)

p. 325 – **Fred Korematsu/ Korematsu vs. United States**

Hirabayashi vs. United States by History Day winner [Kylie Heintzelman](#) Kylie Heintzelman was a 10th Grade student at Mt. Spokane High School when she won the HistoryLink.org award for her Senior Division Paper in the 2011 state competition for National History Day. Her advisor was Luke Thomas. We are proud to publish her essay on Gordon Hirabayashi (b. 1918) and his resistance to the military order for Japanese Americans to evacuate the West Coast in 1942, during World War II. [File 9958: Full Text >](#)

p. 325 – **Gordon Hirabayash**

Gordon Hirabayashi challenges Japanese American exclusion orders on May 16, 1942. On May 16, 1942, Gordon Hirabayashi (b. 1918), University of Washington senior, Quaker, and conscientious objector, drives with his attorney to the Seattle FBI office and challenges the Army's exclusion orders from the West Coast, orders which apply to all Japanese Americans and to their immigrant elders. To comply with these orders, which he believes are based upon racial prejudice and represent a violation of the United States Constitution and the rights of citizens, this principled American-born citizen of Japanese descent writes as part of a four-page statement: "I would be giving helpless consent to the denial of practically all of the things which give me incentive to live." [File 3358: Full Text >](#)

p. 325 – **Japanese American Citizens League (JACL)**

Japanese American Citizen's League (JACL) founded in Seattle in 1930. In 1930, the Japanese American Citizen's League (JACL), the first national organization of Japanese Americans in the country, is founded in Seattle. [File 5268: Full Text >](#)

p. 325 – **American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU)**

American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU) founds chapter in Seattle in July 1935. In July 1935, the American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU) establishes a chapter in Seattle. The group starts work by defending the organizing rights of labor unions, and by obtaining injunctions against the Washington State Patrol from interfering with peaceful picketing. A committee of supporters had been sporadically active in Seattle since 1920 and the ACLU had won important civil rights cases in Washington state. [File 3597: Full Text >](#)

p. 325 – **closure of internment camps 12/17/44**

p. 328 – **assisting the war effort**

Knitting for Victory -- World War II On the home front during World War II (1941-1945), knitting to help the war effort and to keep American soldiers warm was a major preoccupation of Americans, particularly women. The November 24, 1941, cover story of the popular weekly magazine *Life* explained "How To Knit." Along with basic knitting instructions and a pattern for a simple knitted vest, the article advised, "To the great American question 'What can I do to help the war effort?' the commonest answer yet found is 'Knit.'" The article pointed out that hand-knitters were turning out knitted garments for soldiers despite the fact that machine-knitting was more efficient. A volunteer group, "Citizens for the Army and Navy" were campaigning to get one million standard Army sweaters by Christmas. Two weeks after this article appeared, on December 7, 1941, the Japanese bombed Pearl Harbor. America entered World War II. More and more Americans picked up their needles to knit socks, mufflers, and sweaters to keep American soldiers warm. [File 5722: Full Text >](#)

Boeing Company begins importing women workers from across the country in June 1943. In June 1943, the Boeing Company begins importing women workers from all around the country to help build airplanes for the war effort. While in training, the women war workers, known as "Rosie the Riveter" live in temporary housing in the Denny Regrade area of Seattle. These barracks are built by the Federal Housing Administration. [File 3340: Full Text >](#)

World War II Home Front on Puget Sound Fearing a second world war, the United States began to build up its armed forces in the late 1930s, helping to revitalize the Depression-becalmed economy of the Puget Sound region. The area's aircraft and ship builders shifted into high gear after the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor on December 7, 1941. Every sector of business and domestic life was affected by the war effort. The society underwent dramatic change as women took the place of men on production lines, thousands of Japanese Americans were interned, and equal numbers of African Americans migrated to the Northwest in search of defense jobs. Historian James R. Warren surveys the scale and legacies of our area's mobilization during World War II in this essay, adapted with permission from the *Puget Sound Business Journal*. [File 1664: Full Text >](#)

WAVES hit Seattle at Sand Point on January 21, 1943. On January 21, 1943, 11 WAVES (Women Appointed for Voluntary Emergency Service), members of the women's branch of the U.S. Navy, arrive at the Sand Point Naval Air Station. Four officers and seven enlisted women are all graduates of the first training course for women at Cedar Falls, Iowa. They assume duties in communications, the control tower, recreation, ship's services, and in the Officer of the Day's office. [File 2245: Full Text >](#)

p. 331 – **Bracero program**

Mexican nationals arrive in Washington state under the Bracero Program beginning on October 5, 1942.

Beginning on October 5, 1942, and continuing through the 15th, more than 500 Mexican nationals arrive in the Yakima Valley under the Emergency Farm Labor Supply program to alleviate the farm-labor shortage during the war (World War II). The Emergency Farm Labor Supply program, nationally known as the Bracero program, lasted in the Pacific Northwest from 1942-1947 in the Pacific Northwest. [File 7952: Full Text >](#)

History Day award winner -- The Bracero Program: Crossing the Border to a New Life, by History Day

winner Cameron Holt Cameron Holt's paper won the HistoryLink.org Junior Paper award for her 2012 essay submitted in the Washington state History Day competition. Cameron was a student at Housel Middle School in Prosser, Washington, and her advisors were Brock Buttars, Michelle Hall, and Dean Smith. We are very proud to present here her essay on the Bracero Program, which from 1942 to 1964 permitted Mexican citizens to take temporary agricultural work in America. [File 10165: Full Text >](#)

p. 332 – **end of World War II**

World War II ends on August 14, 1945. On August 14, 1945, at 4 p.m. Pacific Time, President Harry Truman (1884-1972) on national radio states, I have received this afternoon a message from the Japanese government of the unconditional surrender of Japan. Immediately the people of the state of Washington begin to celebrate. The celebration sweeps over Seattle like a hurricane. [File 1352: Full Text >](#)

World War II Ends: A Letter Home This is a letter written on August 10, 1945, by William J. "Bill" Nass (1924-1986), a 21-year-old soldier stationed in Shanghai, China. He wrote this letter home to his parents in Seattle immediately after the Hollywood film he was watching, *The Clock*, was stopped and the announcement was made that World War II had ended. As it turned out, the announcement was a few days premature and Nass held the letter until Japan's surrender was verified, writing "This was written during the first announcement we got. It was false! Waited for the real thing before mailing it." The letter is unique because Nass was actually writing it while his fellow soldiers were, in their joy, yelling and screaming and throwing chairs. The letter was submitted by Kathi Ciskowski, daughter of William J. Nass. [File 10157: Full Text >](#)

p. 332 – **Manhattan Project**

A federal judge signs the Order of Condemnation for 625 square miles of land in the Hanford and Richland areas on February 23, 1943.

On February 23, 1943, a federal judge signs the Order of Condemnation for a huge area of land bordering the Columbia River near Richland and Hanford. This paves the way for the construction of the Hanford Engineer Works, part of the super-secret Manhattan Project. Thousands of residents will be evacuated to make way for a huge influx of new workers who will soon be working on manufacturing plutonium and uranium for atomic bombs. [File 8451: Full Text >](#)

Construction of massive plutonium production complex at Hanford begins in March 1943.

In March 1943, the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers begins construction of the massive, and top secret, Hanford Engineer Works along the Columbia River in Benton County. In less than two years, a construction crew that peaks at 51,000 workers constructs three nuclear reactors and many other facilities, along with a new "government city" at Richland. Plutonium produced at the Hanford reactors is used in the first ever atomic explosion at Alamogordo, New Mexico, and in the atomic bomb dropped on Nagasaki, Japan. [File 5363: Full Text >](#)

President Henry Schmitz disapproves nomination of J. Robert Oppenheimer as Walker-Ames Lecturer on December 10, 1954. On December 10, 1954, University of Washington President Dr. Henry Schmitz (1892-1965) disapproves the nomination of physicist J. Robert Oppenheimer (1904-1967) as a visiting lecturer. During World War II, Oppenheimer directed the Manhattan Project, which developed the atomic bomb for the United States government. Schmitz never publicly explains his decision, but Oppenheimer opposes the development of nuclear weapons and his loyalty to the United States is questioned. The decision sets off a controversy over academic freedom and the role of the faculty at the University. [File 3701: Full Text >](#)

Hanford Engineer Works Village, a federal project to house workers on the Manhattan Project, breaks ground in Richland on March 22, 1943. On March 22, 1943, ground is broken at Richland, Benton County, for the Hanford Engineer Works Village, a federally sponsored planned community to house workers and their families at the Hanford Nuclear Reservation. The site is chosen because it is sufficiently remote from population centers to preserve the secrecy of this part of the highly secret Manhattan Project, yet close enough to Hanford (15-30 miles to various parts of the reservation) to allow workers in Richland an easy bus commute. The Manhattan Engineering District (MED) of the Army Corps of Engineers selects the DuPont Company to construct both its industrial facilities at Hanford and the housing village at Richland. A successful and prolific Spokane architect, Swedish-born Gustav Albin Pehrson (d. 1968), is chosen to plan and complete the Richland village, which will eventually house nearly 16,000 residents. Pehrson initially designs nine different house types of various sizes and configurations to which he assigns letters of the alphabet. Some later residents will live in prefabricated houses not of Pehrson's design. Eventually there will be 2,500 permanent housing units, many still in use today. [File 9059: Full Text >](#)

CHAPTER 11: THE POST WAR YEARS, 1945-1979

p. 339 – Cold War

Seattle tests a super siren during the Cold War on February 27, 1952. On February 27, 1952, the Seattle Civil Defense Corps tests a 135-horsepower super siren as part of preparedness for nuclear attack during the Cold War. The three-ton siren is erected on the Seattle Police garage at 5th Avenue and Cherry Street, and measuring equipment is set up to determine if the signal for an attack can "penetrate office buildings above the clatter of office noise." [File 3688: Full Text >](#)

State of Washington breaks ground for a fallout shelter under the Seattle Freeway (Interstate 5) in Seattle's Ravenna neighborhood on May 15, 1962. On May 15, 1962, the State of Washington holds groundbreaking ceremonies for a fallout shelter in Seattle at NE 68th Street and approximately Weedin Place in the Seattle Freeway (now Interstate 5) construction site. The shelter, to be nestled beneath an overpass, is designed to house up to 300 people in the event of thermonuclear attack. It features a squad room, a radio dispatch room, a clerical area for the Washington State Patrol, beds, a medical center and sick bay, toilet facilities, decontamination showers, and a recreation area. [File 3705: Full Text >](#)

President Kennedy's Cold War cold supersedes Seattle World's Fair closing ceremonies on October 21, 1962. On October 21, 1962, President John F. Kennedy (1917-1963) is scheduled to attend the final day of the Seattle Century 21 World's Fair. He bows out with a "cold," interrupting a nationwide tour to return to Washington, D.C., for "bed rest." This is a ruse. What is actually unfolding is the Cuban Missile Crisis, the closest the United States and the Soviet Union will ever come to nuclear war. Includes excerpts from President John F. Kennedy's Address to the Nation on October 22, 1962. [File 967: Full Text >](#)

President Kennedy delivers major policy speech at UW on November 16, 1961. On November 16, 1961, President John F. Kennedy (1917-1963), the 35th president of the United States, delivers a major foreign policy speech at the University of Washington Centennial Convocation. He is also in Seattle to celebrate the 25th

anniversary of Senator Warren Magnuson (1905-1989) in Congress. Magnuson was elected to the House of Representatives in 1936. Kennedy was elected president in 1960. [File 968: Full Text >](#)

President Truman announces V-E Day, victory-in-Europe, on May 8, 1945. At 6:00 a.m. on May 8, 1945, Washington state hears President Harry Truman (1884-1972) announce that, with Germany's surrender, the war in Europe is over. But World War II as a whole continues, because Japan has not yet surrendered. Few take the time to celebrate. This essay includes a statement by Seattle Mayor William F. Devin (1898-1982), Seattle mayor from 1942-1952. [File 1279: Full Text >](#)

p. 341 – **baby boom**

1950 Census: Low birthrate of Great Depression skews population figures; first impacts of post-World War II "baby-boom" felt; men still outnumber women in Washington state, but the gap is closing. The total population of Washington state in 1950 is 2,378,963, an increase of 642,772 (37.02 percent) from the 1940 count of 1,736,191. Population growth east of the Cascade Mountains is 179,624 (27.9 percent of total state population growth), and west of the Cascade Mountains it is 463,148 (72.1 percent of total state population growth). The average population density in Washington in 1950 is 35.73 persons per square mile. Of historical interest, those born between 1931 and 1935 in the depths of the Great Depression make up only 6.6 percent of the state's total population, whereas those born between 1945 and 1950, the first years of the post-war "baby boom," account for 11.1 percent of the state's total population. [File 9424: Full Text >](#)

p. 341 – **Joseph McCarthy**

Seattle's KING-TV cancels Joseph McCarthy's scheduled speech on October 23, 1952. On October 23, 1952, Senator Joseph McCarthy (1908-1957), a conservative Republican from Wisconsin, storms out of Seattle's KING-TV studios after his televised speech is canceled. KING-TV officials, fearing libel, ask McCarthy to remove two paragraphs from a 15-minute telecast. McCarthy argues that no television station has the right to censor a paid political speech, and the evening speech is canceled. [File 8888: Full Text >](#)

p. 341 – **“Red Scare”**

Washington State Legislature passes the Un-American Activities bill on March 8, 1947. On March 8, 1947, the Washington State Legislature creates a Joint Legislative Fact-finding Committee on Un-American Activities in the State of Washington. The committee is charged with investigating groups and individuals that foment internal strife, discord and dissension; infiltrate and undermine the stability of our American institutions; confuse and mislead the people, and impede the normal progress of our state and nation either in war time or a peace time economy. The Committee thus formed becomes part of "Red Scare" investigations occurring across the country that are now (1990s) usually seen as hysterical "witch hunts" that disregarded the right of United States citizens to the freedom of speech provided by the First Amendment of the Constitution. This file quotes extensively from the text of the Resolution to form the committee, and also includes the text of the First Amendment of the U. S. Constitution. [File 1484: Full Text >](#)

Group Health Cooperative, succumbing to Red Scare fears, rejects the membership application of William Pennock on September 19, 1950. On September 19, 1950, Group Health Cooperative, succumbing to Red Scare fears, rejects the membership application of William Pennock. Pennock is a well-known member of the Communist

Party. Some board members question the ethics of rejecting a potential member because of political convictions, but they are in the minority. [File 7420: Full Text >](#)

Seattle Public Library fires foreign-books librarian Natalie Notkin on February 2, 1932. On February 2, 1932, The Seattle Public Library's board of directors dismisses Natalie Notkin (1900-1970), who has served as the foreign-books librarian at The Seattle Public Library's Central branch since 1927. Library board meeting minutes indicate that her dismissal is prompted, at least in part, by recent accusations that she has introduced communistic materials into the library's foreign-language collection. [File 3971: Full Text >](#)

Canwell, Albert F. (1907-2002) Albert F. Canwell was a Republican Washington state legislator from Spokane who served one term in the House from 1946 to 1948. He was famous for being chairman of the Canwell Committee, officially titled the Legislative Joint Fact-Finding Committee on Un-American Activities in Washington State, which sought out communists and other subversives during the "Red Scare" era. Canwell, who had worked various jobs including farmworker, freelance journalist, and police photographer, campaigned for the House seat on an anti-communist platform. He helped write the resolution establishing his committee. Canwell chaired both of the committee's hearings in 1948, which targeted alleged Communist influence in the state's labor movement and at the University of Washington. Three UW professors were fired because of the committee's work. Canwell ran for office many times afterward but never won another race. He was one of the defendants in the sensational John Goldmark libel suit in 1963. He ran his own "intelligence service" in Spokane for decades and continued to gather information on people and groups he deemed subversive. He died, unrepentant and unapologetic, in Spokane in 2002. [File 9887: Full Text >](#)

University of Washington sees Red and fires three faculty members on January 22, 1949. On January 22, 1949, Dr. Raymond B. Allen, University of Washington President, dismisses three University of Washington professors for suspected associations with Communists. [File 1482: Full Text >](#)

University of Washington President Henry Schmitz disapproves nomination of J. Robert Oppenheimer as Walker-Ames Lecturer on December 10, 1954. On December 10, 1954, University of Washington President Dr. Henry Schmitz (1892-1965) disapproves the nomination of physicist J. Robert Oppenheimer (1904-1967) as a visiting lecturer. During World War II, Oppenheimer directed the Manhattan Project, which developed the atomic bomb for the United States government. Schmitz never publicly explains his decision, but Oppenheimer opposes the development of nuclear weapons and his loyalty to the United States is questioned. The decision sets off a controversy over academic freedom and the role of the faculty at the University. [File 3701: Full Text >](#)

Wellspring Archives: Relief vs. Social Service This People's History is based on the early records of Wellspring Family Services, a private, non-profit organization helping families and children in Seattle and King County overcome life's challenges. Founded in 1892 as the Bureau of Associated Charities, Wellspring Family Services has operated under a succession of names. At the time of the events described in this essay, it was called the Seattle Social Welfare League. This essay describes how the agency distinguished between relief and social service efforts during the 1920s. The organization's services have changed over the years, but have always centered on a commitment to a stronger, healthier community. These archival records offer glimpses into aspects of Seattle history not well documented elsewhere, examining societal attitudes toward poverty, need, illness, and addiction -- all of which have altered considerably since Wellspring's early days. This is one of a series entitled "Out of the Archives," and appeared in November 2011 in Wellspring's monthly internal newsletter, *The Fiddlehead*. It was written by Wellspring Family Services executive assistant Deborah Townsend. [File 10098: Full Text >](#)

p. 342 – Federal Reserve Bank

Federal Reserve Bank (Seattle) The building formally known as the Federal Reserve Bank of San Francisco -- Seattle Branch is located on 2nd Avenue between Madison and Spring streets in downtown Seattle. It housed the Seattle branch of the Federal Reserve Bank of San Francisco for more than 50 years. Designed in 1949 by architect

William Bain Sr. (1896-1985) of the firm NBBJ (Naramore, Bain, Brady and Johanson) in the Moderne style, the building's design conveys a sense permanence and security. Its austerity and visual weight, as well as its relatively short stature, stand out among the many Modern skyscrapers in the surrounding financial district. The building gave the branch the room it needed to grow along with the needs of the banking industry in the Northwest. In February 2008 the branch closed when bank operations moved to a new building in Renton. [File 8785: Full Text >](#)

p. 343 – Korean War

Korean War begins on June 25, 1950. On June 25, 1950, the Korean War begins when North Korean troops invade South Korea, but the event goes largely unnoticed in Seattle. Seattle's principal role during the three-year conflict will be as a port of embarkation through which personnel and materiel flow to the Far East. [File 3323: Full Text >](#)

Cease-fire agreement marks the end of the Korean War on July 27, 1953. On July 27, 1953, a cease-fire agreement between the United Nations and North Korea marks the end of the Korean War. Military activity in Seattle continues at Pier 91, which funnels troops and equipment enroute to the Far East. Technically a United Nations sanctioned police action, the war has killed more than 33,000 Americans along with approximately 3.5 million Asians beginning in June 1951. The state of Washington counted 558 among the dead. [File 3324: Full Text >](#)

Puget Sound Naval Shipyard Puget Sound Naval Shipyard, located adjacent to the city of Bremerton on Sinclair Inlet, was established in 1891. It was the first dry-dock and repair facility in the Northwest capable of handling the largest ships. During World War I (1917-1918), the shipyard expanded to include shipbuilding, adding hundreds of new ships and boats to the Allied war effort. During the Great Depression (1929-1939), the shipyard went through a period of expansion as the nation built up its fleet. During World War II (1941-1945), the Puget Sound Naval Shipyard's primary mission was the repair of Pacific Fleet warships damaged in battle. After the war, the shipyard's mission was changed from repair work to the deactivation and storage of Pacific Fleet vessels. Puget Sound Naval Shipyard also engaged in an extensive program of modernizing aircraft carriers, including the conversion of conventional flight decks to the angled decks used by the new jet aircraft. During the Korean Conflict (1950-1953), the facility activated many of the ships in the reserve "mothball" fleet, deactivating them again in 1954. During the 1950s the shipyard entered into a new era of construction with the building of two new guided missile frigates. In 1961, the shipyard was designated as a submarine repair facility and in 1965 it was established as a nuclear-capable repair facility. In 1992, the shipyard was placed on the National Register of Historic Places. Today, the Puget Sound Naval Shipyard is the largest and most diverse shipyard on the West Coast and one of Washington state's largest industrial complexes. [File 5579: Full Text >](#)

Washington State Roll of Honor, Part 10: Korean WarHistoryLink is honored to offer the first Web posting of a comprehensive roster of Washington state citizens -- more than 9,000 as of 2010 -- who gave their lives in the service of their communities and country. Part 10 comprises a list of those who lost their lives during the Korean War (1950-1953). [File 7101: Full Text >](#)

p. 343 – General Douglas MacArthur

Cease-fire agreement marks the end of the Korean War on July 27, 1953. On July 27, 1953, a cease-fire agreement between the United Nations and North Korea marks the end of the Korean War. Military activity in Seattle continues at Pier 91, which funnels troops and equipment enroute to the Far East. Technically a United

Nations sanctioned police action, the war has killed more than 33,000 Americans along with approximately 3.5 million Asians beginning in June 1951. The state of Washington counted 558 among the dead. [File 3324: Full Text](#) >

p. 343 – Hanford Nuclear Site

Construction of North Richland Construction Camp, which will eventually house 25,000 Hanford workers and their families, is authorized on August 15, 1947. On August 15, 1947, a Hanford Engineer Works directive authorizes work to begin on the North Richland Construction Camp in Benton County. The camp, which will soon house 25,000 Hanford workers and their families, is part of a huge Cold War expansion of Hanford. Designed as a temporary town for workers building new plutonium-production and other nuclear facilities on the nearby Hanford site, it consists of prefabricated houses, barracks, trailer sites, and community buildings. Its streets are laid out on a grid on flat former farmland about four miles north of Richland. The camp will be completed in 1948 and see its population peak that year, after which population will fluctuate for several years and then decline as construction at Hanford winds down. A U.S. Army anti-aircraft unit named Camp Hanford will occupy part of the site during the 1950s. By the twenty-first century, there will be little left of the North Richland Construction Camp except the remnants of streets and foundations. In 2011, part of the former camp will become the Port of Benton's USS *Triton* Sail Park. [File 10805: Full Text](#) >

President Kennedy participates in ground-breaking ceremonies for construction of N Reactor at Hanford on September 26, 1963. On September 26, 1963, President John F. Kennedy (1917-1963) participates in groundbreaking ceremonies for the construction of a dual-purpose reactor -- designated the N Reactor -- at the Hanford nuclear reservation near Richland, Washington. The reactor was the ninth to be built at Hanford but the first designed to produce both weapons-grade plutonium for nuclear bombs and electricity for commercial and domestic use. Kennedy's visit commemorated both the start of plutonium production at the facility and the beginning of construction of its power-generating component. [File 10640: Full Text](#) >

Nuclear Reactor Building on the University of Washington campus is dedicated on June 1, 1961. On June 1, 1961, the Nuclear Reactor Building (later More Hall Annex) on the University of Washington campus in Seattle is dedicated. Built to provide training and experimental opportunities to Department of Nuclear Engineering students and faculty, the building is also designed to promote nuclear energy to the public. The Architect Artist Group (TAAG), a collaboration between architects, artists, and engineers, working with Albert L. Babb (b. 1925), chair of the department, designed a building with a nearly all-glass upper level to allow the public to observe the reactor and scientists working with it from an observation plaza on the upper side of the sloped building site. The building will be used by the Nuclear Engineering department until 1988, when the reactor will be shut down. Concerns about nuclear energy stemming from waste management problems, the Three Mile Island nuclear reactor accident in 1979, and the failed Washington Public Power Supply System erode interest in nuclear engineering and fewer students pursue degrees in the field. With student numbers declining, the department decides, in 1992, to disband. The reactor will sit idle until after 2001, when concerns raised by the September 11th terrorist attacks prompt the university to move forward with decommissioning plans. The reactor will be removed in 2008, but the building remains and will receive state and federal landmark status. Plans for its future are (as of 2013) undetermined. [File 10333: Full Text](#) >

Siting the Hanford Engineering Works: I was there, Leslie! Louis Chesnut served in the Federal Land Bank system for 35 years, 10 years as vice president. This is his recollection of his involvement in the selection of the Hanford site for the development of the atomic energy project in 1943. Regarding documentation for this account Chesnut says, "All records relating to acquisition of the zone became the property of the Army Engineers, and those of us who worked there have only memories, no recorded data." Chesnut's account originally appeared in the Spring 1986 issue of *The Pacific Northwesterner*, published by the Westerners of Spokane. It is reprinted here with their permission. [File 7534: Full Text](#) >

A federal judge signs the Order of Condemnation for 625 square miles of land in the Hanford and Richland areas on February 23, 1943. On February 23, 1943, a federal judge signs the Order of Condemnation for a huge

area of land bordering the Columbia River near Richland and Hanford. This paves the way for the construction of the Hanford Engineer Works, part of the super-secret Manhattan Project. Thousands of residents will be evacuated to make way for a huge influx of new workers who will soon be working on manufacturing plutonium and uranium for atomic bombs. [File 8451: Full Text >](#)

Construction of massive plutonium production complex at Hanford begins in March 1943. In March 1943, the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers begins construction of the massive, and top secret, Hanford Engineer Works along the Columbia River in Benton County. In less than two years, a construction crew that peaks at 51,000 workers constructs three nuclear reactors and many other facilities, along with a new "government city" at Richland. Plutonium produced at the Hanford reactors is used in the first ever atomic explosion at Alamogordo, New Mexico, and in the atomic bomb dropped on Nagasaki, Japan. [File 5363: Full Text >](#)

Hanford Engineer Works Village, a federal project to house workers on the Manhattan Project, breaks ground in Richland on March 22, 1943. On March 22, 1943, ground is broken at Richland, Benton County, for the Hanford Engineer Works Village, a federally sponsored planned community to house workers and their families at the Hanford Nuclear Reservation. The site is chosen because it is sufficiently remote from population centers to preserve the secrecy of this part of the highly secret Manhattan Project, yet close enough to Hanford (15-30 miles to various parts of the reservation) to allow workers in Richland an easy bus commute. The Manhattan Engineering District (MED) of the Army Corps of Engineers selects the DuPont Company to construct both its industrial facilities at Hanford and the housing village at Richland. A successful and prolific Spokane architect, Swedish-born Gustav Albin Pehrson (d. 1968), is chosen to plan and complete the Richland village, which will eventually house nearly 16,000 residents. Pehrson initially designs nine different house types of various sizes and configurations to which he assigns letters of the alphabet. Some later residents will live in prefabricated houses not of Pehrson's design. Eventually there will be 2,500 permanent housing units, many still in use today. [File 9059: Full Text >](#)

p. 344 – real estate covenant

Seattle Civic Unity Committee denounces restrictive covenants that discriminate against African Americans, Jews, and Asians in February 1948. In February 1948, the Seattle Civic Unity Committee denounces restrictive covenants which deny housing to minorities, principally African Americans. These restrictions effectively confine African Americans to the Central Area and a corridor along South Jackson Street, and prevent them from moving to neighborhoods such as Mount Baker, Capitol Hill and Broadmoor. [File 3153: Full Text >](#)

p. 345 – Boeing Machinist Strike of 1948

Boeing Machinists Strike, 1948 On April 22, 1948, the Aeronautical Machinists Union, IAM District Lodge 751, struck the Boeing Company. William Allen was then president of Boeing. For the Machinists the issues were preserving longstanding seniority rules that the company wanted to scrap, and achieving a 10 cent per hour raise for all categories of labor. The strike was characterized by the unusual occurrence of another union, Dave Beck's Teamsters, collaborating with the company to defeat the machinists union. On September 13, 1948, the Machinists returned to work without a victory, but in the subsequent NLRB-supervised election they soundly defeated the Teamsters. [File 2283: Full Text >](#)

Group Health Cooperative expresses solidarity with Boeing machinists by granting them membership on a deferred-dues basis during their strike that begins on April 22, 1948. Between April 22 and September 13, 1948, the newly founded Group Health Cooperative expresses solidarity with Boeing Co. machinists (International Association of Machinists, or IAM) by granting them membership on a deferred-dues basis. This action solidifies Group Health's relationships with labor, but results in the Boeing Company's longterm enmity toward Group Health. [File 7426: Full Text >](#)

Aeronautical Machinists Union strikes Boeing on April 22, 1948. On April 22, 1948, the Aeronautical Machinists Union, IAM District Lodge 751, begins a long and bitter strike against the Boeing Company. Machinists will return to work on September 13, 1948, without a contract victory, but they soundly defeat the competing Teamsters Union in a subsequent federally supervised jurisdiction election. [File 3553: Full Text >](#)

p. 345 – Un-American Activities Bill

Washington State Legislature passes the Un-American Activities bill on March 8, 1947. On March 8, 1947, the Washington State Legislature creates a Joint Legislative Fact-finding Committee on Un-American Activities in the State of Washington. The committee is charged with investigating groups and individuals that foment internal strife, discord and dissension; infiltrate and undermine the stability of our American institutions; confuse and mislead the people, and impede the normal progress of our state and nation either in war time or a peace time economy. The Committee thus formed becomes part of "Red Scare" investigations occurring across the country that are now (1990s) usually seen as hysterical "witch hunts" that disregarded the right of United States citizens to the freedom of speech provided by the First Amendment of the Constitution. This file quotes extensively from the text of the Resolution to form the committee, and also includes the text of the First Amendment of the U. S. Constitution. [File 1484: Full Text >](#)

p. 346 – Columbia Basin Irrigation Project

First irrigation water reaches Pasco on May 15, 1948. On May 15, 1948, a Pasco farm receives the first water pumped from the Columbia Basin Irrigation Project. At about 11:15 a.m., Pasco Judge B. B. Horrigan gives the signal to open the canal gate. The water results from decades of dreams and the completion of Grand Coulee Dam. [File 7555: Full Text >](#)

Columbia National Wildlife Refuge The Columbia Basin Irrigation Project did more than turn half a million acres of arid Eastern Washington into lush farmland. It also created an enticing stopover for millions of migrating birds. Land once dominated by sagebrush and dust now sparkles with reservoirs. Seepage from canals and pipes has given rise to marshes, bogs, and ponds. Drainage ditches, designed to carry excess water from farm fields, function as creeks in a landscape redesigned by hydraulics. These manufactured lakes and artificial wetlands form the heart of the Columbia National Wildlife Refuge, a 30,000-acre haven for more than 200 species of birds and waterfowl, including many that previously bypassed the region entirely. [File 7459: Full Text >](#)

Wenatchee Confluence State Park Located at the confluence of the Wenatchee and Columbia rivers, in almost the exact center of Washington State, Wenatchee Confluence State Park is a study in dichotomies. The north side is a manicured haven for people who like to camp in comfort. The southern half is a manmade "natural" area, a former orchard and cattle pasture that has been bulldozed back into wetlands. The line of demarcation is the Wenatchee, still muscled by enough rapids to be popular with river rafters upstream, merging with the reservoired Columbia on the eastern edge of the park. Three major highways converge nearby in a busy interchange lined with warehouses and big-box stores. The hum from the highways has replaced the roar once made by rapids at this point, but the voice of nature can still be heard, in the calls of birds and the sound of wind rustling through the leaves of stately old cottonwoods. [File 7551: Full Text >](#)

p. 347 – Second Bacon Siphon and Tunnel

p. 347 – McNary Dam

McNary National Wildlife Refuge The McNary National Wildlife Refuge, on the east bank of the Columbia River near its confluence with the Snake, was established in 1954 in an effort to compensate for the loss of wildlife habitat due to the construction of McNary Dam. With nearly 16,000 acres of marshes, mudflats, and shrub-steppe uplands, the refuge has become an important feeding and resting area for migratory birds and waterfowl. Its bays and shorelines serve as nurseries and passageways to spawning grounds for endangered steelhead, sockeye, and Chinook salmon. However, like other wildlife preserves on the mid-Columbia, McNary has proven to be a better haven for avian life than for fisheries. Indeed, one of the many threats facing the river's fish stocks today is the increasing population of American white pelicans and other predators, which now flourish in areas where they were once uncommon, drawn by McNary and other refuges. [File 7493: Full Text >](#)

President Eisenhower dedicates McNary Dam on September 23, 1954. On September 23, 1954, President Dwight D. Eisenhower dedicates McNary Dam located on the Columbia River near Umatilla, Oregon, and Plymouth, Washington, 292 miles from the mouth of the river. The dam is named for Oregon Senator Charles L. McNary (1874-1944), who spearheaded efforts to resolve problems of navigation on the river. The dam is 7,365 feet long and towers 183 feet over the riverbed. [File 5673: Full Text >](#)

p. 347 – Chief Joseph Dam

Douglas County -- Thumbnail History Douglas County is a predominantly rural county located in north central Washington. Waterville is the county seat. The county's proximity to Grand Coulee Dam just over the county line (spanning the Columbia River between Okanogan and Grant counties), as well as the four Columbia River dams within the county have over time provided work for thousands of Douglas County residents. The county comprises 1821 square miles, and ranks 17th in size among Washington's 39 counties. The Columbia River, either flowing through its channel or constricted in equalizing reservoirs behind dams, almost completely encircles Douglas County, which is bordered by Chelan County to the west, Okanogan County to the north, Grant County to the east/southeast, and a small part of Kittitas County to the south. As of June 2006 Douglas County had an estimated population of 35,700. East Wenatchee (population 11,420) and Bridgeport (population 2075) are the largest towns. Agriculture, especially apple, pear, and cherry orchards, and wheat, provides a significant percentage of the county's employment. [File 7961: Full Text >](#)

p. 347 – The Dalles Dam

The Dalles Bridge spanning the Columbia River is completed on December 18, 1953. On December 18, 1953, The Dalles Bridge is completed. It carries U.S. 197 across the Columbia River and connects Murdock and Dallesport in Klickitat County, Washington, to The Dalles, Oregon. It is a steel truss cantilever structure, one of two cantilever bridges built in Washington during the 1950s. [File 7804: Full Text >](#)

p. 348 – growth of fruit industry (apples, nectarines, pears, apricots, plums, cherries)

p. 350 – growth of vegetable industry

p. 351 – growth of grain industry (wheat)

p. 352 – interstate highway system

Eisenhower signs National System of Interstate and Defense Highways Act on June 29, 1956. On June 29, 1956, President Dwight D. Eisenhower (1890-1969) signs into law the National System of Interstate and Defense Highways Act. This Act provides 90 percent federal funding for a nationwide network of limited-access roads, and spurs the construction of the American Interstate Highway System. It funds construction of what is called the Seattle Freeway, the future Interstate 5. [File 4030: Full Text >](#)

First part of Seattle Freeway (Interstate 5) route receives federal funding on October 1, 1957. On October 1, 1957, the first portion of the Seattle Freeway route, now (2005) the Seattle portion of Interstate 5, receives federal approval and funding. The route cuts through fully developed neighborhoods, following the pathway of a formerly proposed toll road known as the Eastside Expressway. [File 4166: Full Text >](#)

p. 353 – Brown vs Board of Education

African American student at the UW stirs racism and a defense of civil rights in January 1874. During January 1874, a "colored" (African American) student attends the winter session of the University of Washington. Some white parents complain to the Board of Regents for allowing "colored" children to take classes at the university. One "very ardent and active Republican politician" withdraws his children from the University. In response, Beriah Brown (1815-1900), editor of the *Puget Sound Dispatch*, defends civil rights: "Every child of African descent born in this country has the same right of access to our public schools as the children of the most privileged of Caucasian [sic] blood. No teacher or school officer has any more legal right to exclude one than the other." [File 1606: Full Text >](#)

Seattle School Board votes to end mandatory busing for desegregation in elementary schools on November 20, 1996. On November 20, 1996, the Seattle School Board votes unanimously to end mandatory busing for the purpose of racial desegregation in elementary schools, beginning with the 1997-1998 school year. Two years later, on November 4, 1998, the board dismantles the last remnants of the so-called "Seattle Plan," ending race-based busing of students in middle and high schools as of the 1999-2000 school year. [File 3127: Full Text >](#)

Mandatory Busing in Seattle: Memories of a Bumpy Ride Jovelyn Agbalog (b. 1969) and Linnea Tate Rodriguez (b. 1969) were in grade school when the Seattle School Board implemented mandatory, cross-town busing in the interests of racial integration in 1978. The two met each other on the first day of school the next year, while waiting for the bus that would take them from their Mount Baker neighborhood, in Seattle's South End, to Broadview Elementary School, at the northern edge of the city. Jovelyn, a Filipina, was entering the fifth grade and had already been through one year of busing. Linnea, a Caucasian, was a fourth-grade rookie, freshly moved to Seattle from Lewiston, Idaho. They recall their experiences on the bus and in the classroom in this interview with HistoryLink staff historian (and Linnea's mother) Cassandra Tate. [File 3915: Full Text >](#)

p. 353 – civil rights movement

NAACP, Seattle Branch The Seattle Branch of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) was founded on October 23, 1913, and became the first of the national civil rights organizations to be established in the city. The national NAACP was founded on February 12, 1909, and established its national office in New York in 1910. [File 695: Full Text >](#)

NAACP, Seattle Branch, is founded on October 23, 1913. On October 23, 1913, the Seattle Branch of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) is founded, and becomes the first national civil rights organization to be established in the city. Leticia Graves is elected president. The NAACP was founded on February 12, 1909. It established its national office in New York City in 1910. [File 693: Full Text >](#)

Congress of Racial Equality (CORE), Seattle Chapter The Seattle Chapter of the Congress of Racial Equality was a powerful force in the city's civil rights movement during the 1960s, spearheading efforts to bring to public attention the inequalities black people suffered in housing, employment, and education. In 1960, Seattle's black population was mostly confined to housing in the Central Area, not seen as sales clerks in grocery or department stores, and studying in segregated public schools. The organization was successful in opening job opportunities and in calling attention to other forms of discrimination. [File 9879: Full Text >](#)

p. 353 – Dr. Martin Luther King

Martin Luther King Jr. arrives for his sole Seattle visit on November 8, 1961. On November 8, 1961, Dr. Martin Luther King Jr. (1929-1968), the great civil rights leader, arrives for his only visit to Seattle. He speaks at the University of Washington and at Temple de Hirsch on Thursday, November 9, and at Garfield High School and the Eagles Auditorium on Friday, November 10, 1961. A reception follows at Plymouth Congregational Church. [File 673: Full Text >](#)

p. 353, 360 – National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP)

NAACP, Seattle Branch The Seattle Branch of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) was founded on October 23, 1913, and became the first of the national civil rights organizations to be established in the city. The national NAACP was founded on February 12, 1909, and established its national office in New York in 1910. [File 695: Full Text >](#)

NAACP, Seattle Branch, is founded on October 23, 1913. On October 23, 1913, the Seattle Branch of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) is founded, and becomes the first national civil rights organization to be established in the city. Leticia Graves is elected president. The NAACP was founded on February 12, 1909. It established its national office in New York City in 1910. [File 693: Full Text >](#)

Bremerton NAACP branch is founded on May 23, 1943. On May 23, 1943, local activists and community members form the Bremerton branch of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP). Established in response to segregation and racial tensions in Kitsap County, the group spawns the Carver Civic Club, a social group for African American women that also continues today (2011)

NAACP calls for school closures to spur integration on February 27, 1968. On February 27, 1968, the Seattle chapter of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) advocates closure of Horace Mann, Washington, and Garfield schools to spur integration in the remaining schools. [File 1370: Full Text >](#)

p. 353 – Civil Rights Act of 1964

President Lyndon B. Johnson signs Civil Rights Act on July 2, 1964. On the evening of July 2, 1964, President Lyndon B. Johnson signs the Civil Rights Bill into law. (This file includes the text of the *Seattle Post-Intelligencer* editorial on the Civil Rights Act.) [File 1282: Full Text >](#)

p. 356 – sit in in mayor’s office July 1, 1963

First sit-in of the civil rights movement in Seattle occurs on July 1, 1963. On July 1, 1963, 35 young people stage the first sit-in of the civil rights movement in Seattle in the offices of Mayor Gordon S. Clinton. They are protesting the composition of a 12-member human rights commission proposed by Clinton. They occupy the mayor's offices for 24 hours before leaving. There are no incidents and no arrests. [File 3161: Full Text >](#)

First sit-in arrests of Seattle’s civil rights movement occur on July 25, 1963. On July 25, 1963, police arrest 22 persons in the first arrests of the civil rights movement in Seattle. The demonstrators are protesting the composition of a human rights commission proposed by Mayor Gordon S. Clinton (b. 1920). Protesters had occupied the chambers of the city council for four days and are arrested after refusing a police order to leave. [File 3162: Full Text >](#)

p. 356 – Stokely Carmichael

Stokely Carmichael speaks to 4,000 at Seattle's Garfield High School on April 19, 1967. On April 19, 1967, Stokely Carmichael (1941-1998) speaks to an audience of 4,000 at Seattle's Garfield High School. He is chairman of the civil rights organization SNCC (Student Nonviolent Coordinating Committee), and the originator of the slogan "black power." His talk urging blacks to come together and throw off the shackles imposed by white "honkies" has a momentous effect on the outlook of many Seattleites. Years later Aaron Dixon, then a leader in the University of Washington Black Students Union, recalled listening intently. "And the way I looked at myself and America changed" (Gunn). [File 3715: Full Text >](#)

p. 356 – Student Nonviolent Coordinating Committee (SNCC)

p. 357 – Vietnam War

Gulf of Tonkin Resolution in Congress marks active involvement of the U.S. in the Vietnam War on August 7, 1964. On August 7, 1964, Congress passes the Gulf of Tonkin Resolution, marking the active involvement of the U.S. in the Vietnam War. The resolution approves retaliatory air raids against North Vietnam and allows the President to take all necessary measures to repel any armed attack against U.S. forces and to prevent further aggression in Vietnam. The act serves as the constitutional basis for the escalation of military activity in the region for the next 11 years. Johnson assures Congress, "As I have repeatedly made clear, the United States intends no rashness, and seeks no wider war" (Library of Congress). [File 3334: Full Text >](#)

Weeks of protests erupt in Seattle beginning on May 1, 1970, against U. S. entry into Cambodia and to protest the killing of four Kent State students. On May 1, 1970, protests erupt in Seattle following the announcement of President Richard M. Nixon (1913-1994) that U.S. Forces in Vietnam would pursue enemy troops into Cambodia, a neutral country. The focus of activity is the University of Washington, but anti-war protests and disruptions also sweep downtown. Student strikers dominate the campus radio station and newspaper, and Seattle police are accused of using excessive force. This file summarizes the cataclysmic events of May 1970. [File 2308: Full Text >](#)

Antiwar protesters block Interstate-5 Freeway on May 5, 1970. On May 5, 1970, an estimated 1,000 people surge onto southbound lanes of the Interstate 5 Freeway to protest the recent invasion of Cambodia and the deaths of four antiwar protesters on the Kent State campus in Ohio the previous day. [File 1994: Full Text >](#)

Fall of Saigon to Communist troops marks the end of the Vietnam War on April 30, 1975. On April 30, 1975, Saigon, capital of the Republic of Vietnam, falls to Communist troops from North Vietnam, marking the end of the Vietnam War. Active U.S. involvement in the conflict had ended in 1973 with a cease-fire agreement between the parties, but fighting continued between North and South Vietnam. The last two American combat deaths are two Marines who cover the evacuation of the U.S. Embassy in Saigon. [File 3335: Full Text >](#)

Soldiers returning from Vietnam are welcomed with parade, barbecue in Seattle on July 10, 1969. On July 10, 1969, the first American troops to be withdrawn from the Vietnam War are welcomed home with a parade and barbecue in Seattle. Led by two Army bands, a battalion of 778 soldiers -- wearing jungle fatigues and carrying M-16 rifles with fixed bayonets -- marches down 4th Avenue from Virginia to Madison. Spectators line the street, waving flags and cheering as the soldiers pass by. Secretary of the Army Stanley R. Resor (1917-2012), Senator Warren G. Magnuson (1905-1989), Seattle Mayor Floyd Miller (1902-1985), Lieutenant Governor John A. Cherberg (1910-1992), and other dignitaries greet the troops with speeches from a reviewing platform set up in front of the downtown library. Anti-war demonstrators interrupt some of the speeches with shouts of "Bring them all back." At the end of the ceremonies, the soldiers are trucked to the Seattle Center for a salmon barbecue and then returned to Fort Lewis to complete processing for either discharge from the military or reassignment. [File 10184: Full Text >](#)

p. 357 – demonstrations (UW 10/16/65 downtown) (keyword=Vietnam War)

Protesters march in Seattle's first major demonstration against the war in Vietnam on October 16, 1965. On October 16, 1965, between 350 and 400 citizens marched in downtown Seattle to protest the escalating U.S. military involvement in Vietnam. This first major local demonstration against the war was organized by Seattle Committee to End the War in Vietnam (SCEWV) and the University of Washington chapter of Students for a Democratic Society (SDS). Demonstrators marched under police escort down 4th Avenue from the Federal Courthouse at Spring Street to a noon rally at Westlake Mall, where scuffles broke out with hostile spectators. [File 4179: Full Text >](#)

p. 357 – demonstrations 4/26/68

UW students participate in national student strike on April 26, 1968. On April 26, 1968, some 2,000 students boycott classes at the University of Washington in Seattle and 600-plus attend a rally in front of the Administration Building. [File 1386: Full Text >](#)

Citizens numbering 2,000 march in protest of Vietnam War on April 26, 1968. On April 26, 1968, 2,000 citizens march peacefully against the Vietnam War. The march begins at the the King County Court House in downtown Seattle and ends at Seattle Center. [File 1387: Full Text >](#)

p. 358 – Seattle World's Fair

Century 21 -- The 1962 Seattle World's Fair, Part 1 The 1962 Seattle World's Fair, otherwise known as Century 21, gave visitors a glimpse of the future and left Seattle with a lasting legacy. The exposition gave Seattle world-wide recognition, effectively "putting it on the map." Years of planning went into the fair through the hard work of visionaries, go-getters, civic boosters, and dreamers. Many of the concepts and icons of Century 21 remain ingrained in Seattle culture, even as the "real" 21st Century begins. [File 2290: Full Text >](#)

Century 21 -- The 1962 Seattle World's Fair, Part 2 To many, there never was a fair to compare to the Seattle World's Fair, or Century 21. Between April 21 and October 21, 1962, close to 10 million people visited the fair to climb the Space Needle, ride the Monorail, see the exhibits, take in a show, and enjoy the food, fun, and festivities. Maybe one of these people was you. [File 2291: Full Text >](#)

Other Century 21 essays include #1005, 10008, 10013. 10022, 10036, 10089, 10092, 10100, 10363

p. 359 – Spokane Expo '74

Expo '74: Spokane World's Fair Expo '74, Spokane's World's Fair, was an international exposition held from May 4 to November 3, 1974, in Spokane. With a population of only 170,000, Spokane was the smallest city ever to hold a world's fair, yet it attracted almost 5.2 million visitors. The theme was the environment. Ten countries, including the Soviet Union, Japan, and the United States, along with many states and corporations, hosted pavilions on the 100-acre site. The original impetus of the fair was to clean up and reclaim the land alongside the mighty falls of the Spokane River, which for decades had been clogged with railroad tracks, trestles, and warehouses. Under the leadership of King Cole (1922-2010), a veteran of urban renewal projects, Spokane made the audacious decision to host a world's fair and then convert the downtown site into a public park. After the fair closed, the site was revamped to become Riverfront Park, today the city's downtown showcase and gathering spot. David H. Rodgers (b. 1923) Spokane's mayor at the time, said, "Reduced to its essentials, we gave a great big party and the rest of the world came and paid the bill" (Youngs, 503). [File 10791: Full Text >](#)

Expo 74 Spokane World's Fair opens on May 4, 1974. On May 4, 1974, Expo 74, the Spokane World's Fair opens on two islands in the Spokane River for a six-month run. The exposition theme is "Celebrating Tomorrow's Fresh New Environment" (Bowers). Ten nations have exhibitions that will be visited by 5.6 million people. After the fair closes, Spokane will be left with a convention center, an opera house, and a park. [File 5133: Full Text >](#)

President Richard M. Nixon presides over the opening of Expo '74, Spokane's World's Fair, on May 4, 1974. On May 4, 1974, President Richard M. Nixon (1913-1994) presides over the opening of Expo '74, Spokane's World's Fair. Addressing a crowd of 85,000 -- including a few hecklers -- Nixon says he is most impressed "that the idea did not come from Washington D.C., but from Washington state" ("Complete Text"). As he formally declares Expo '74 open, 50,000 balloons are released into the sky. Spokane, with a population of about 170,000, is the smallest city ever to host a world's fair. Spokane organizers conceived of the fair as a way to revamp the city's railroad-choked riverfront and restore public access to the spectacular Spokane Falls of the Spokane River. Expo '74's theme is the environment and many of the 10 international pavilions are about ecological problems and solutions. Spokane's morning daily newspaper, *The Spokesman-Review*, declares in a headline that "Opening Day Goes Like Clockwork" (Young). The reviews from the national and international press are mostly positive. Expo '74 will run until November 3, 1974, and will attract almost 5.2 million visitors. The fair's site will eventually be transformed into Riverfront Park, the city's downtown park showcase. [File 5133: Full Text >](#)

p. 360 – death of MLK

Washington state mourns the death of Rev. Martin Luther King on April 7, 1968. On April 7, 1968, Washington residents mourn the death of civil rights leader Rev. Martin Luther King Jr. (1929-1968), who was assassinated in Memphis, Tennessee, on April 4, 1968. [File 1380: Full Text >](#)

p/ 360 – Dorm Braman – MLK - civic day 4/8/68

p. 360 – Dan Evans

Governor Dan Evans appoints Marvin Glass to Seattle Community College Board of Trustees on July 24, 1969. On July 24, 1969, Washington Governor Daniel J. Evans appoints African American Marvin E. Glass to the Board of Trustees of Seattle Community College after a series of protests, some violent, over community college discriminatory policies including the lack of African American representation on the board. Six civil rights organizations support the appointment, but the more radical Black Student Union and Black United Front object. [File 2036: Full Text >](#)

Evans, Daniel J. (b. 1925) and Nancy Bell Evans (b. 1933) Dan and Nancy Evans have devoted nearly half a century to public service, in and out of political office, with a level of commitment matched by few of their fellow citizens. As a three-term governor of Washington and later United States senator, Dan Evans earned the nickname "Straight Arrow." He was so widely admired and his administration so untouched by scandal that a prominent columnist once joked he was "no fun." Nancy Evans has served on the boards of innumerable educational and nonprofit organizations, including the Board of Trustees of her alma mater, Whitman College. The Evanses are known for the heft of their Rolodex and their willingness to tap into it in support of various good causes. Together they personify the term "power couple" in Washington state. The Seattle-King County Association of Realtors named Dan and Nancy Evans First Citizens of 2003. [File 7167: Full Text >](#)

p. 360 – Black Panthers

Bobby Seale names Aaron Dixon head of Seattle Black Panthers on April 13, 1968. On April 13, 1968, during a visit to Seattle, Black Panther Party Chair Bobby Seale appoints Aaron Dixon as head of the party's new Seattle chapter. [File 1382: Full Text >](#)

Riots erupt in Seattle's Central Area after Franklin High protestors are sentenced on July 1, 1968. On July 1, 1968, Judge James Dore sentences Aaron Dixon, Larry Gossett, and Carl Miller to six months in jail for unlawful assembly during a March 29 sit-in at Franklin High School, triggering riots in Seattle's Central Area. Several hundred young African Americans gather at Garfield High School for a protest rally, which degenerates into rock throwing. Seattle Police give an order to disperse and arrest six persons during five hours of unrest. [File 1515: Full Text >](#)

Rumors prompt armed Black Panthers to visit Rainier Beach High School on September 6, 1968. On September 6, 1968, approximately 25 members of the Black Panther Party, half with firearms, visit Rainier Beach Junior-Senior High School following news reports and rumors that white students have been beating African American students. The men seek assurances that their "black bretheren" (*Seattle Post-Intelligencer*) would not be molested. They leave after meeting with principal Donald S. Means. [File 2293: Full Text >](#)

Black Panthers open the Sidney Miller Free Medical Clinic on December 1, 1969. On December 1, 1969, the Black Panthers open the Sidney Miller Free Medical Clinic at Spruce Street and 20th Avenue in Seattle. [File 1335: Full Text >](#)

p. 360 – United Indian People's Council

Fort Lawton military police clash with Native American and other protesters in the future Discovery Park on March 8, 1970. On March 8, 1970, about 100 members and sympathizers of United Indian People's Council (later United Indians of All Tribes) confront the 392nd Military Police Company, who are armed with riot gear, while

attempting to claim part of Fort Lawton, a 1,100-acre army post in Seattle's Magnolia neighborhood. The United Indians, who are armed with sandwiches, sleeping bags, and cooking utensils, want to create a cultural center for Indians and Alaska natives. They are evicted but set up camp outside the base. The protestors, who are led by Bob Satiacum, a Puyallup, include Bernie Whitebear (1937-2000) of the Colville Confederated Tribe, Leonard Peltier (b. 1944), who goes on to become an American Indian Movement activist and one of America's best known prisoners, and actor Jane Fonda. [File 5513: Full Text >](#)

p. 360 – American Indian Movement

Native Americans and supporters stage fish-in to protest denial of treaty rights on March 2, 1964. On March 2, 1964, Native Americans protest the denial of treaty rights by fishing in defiance of state law. Inspired by sit-ins of the civil rights movement, Actor Marlon Brando (b. 1924), Episcopal clergyman John Yaryan from San Francisco, and Puyallup tribal leader Bob Satiacum (1929-1991) catch salmon in the Puyallup River without state permits. The action is called a fish-in and results in the arrest of Brando and the clergyman. Satiacum is not arrested. The Pierce County Prosecutor refuses to file charges and Brando and Yaryan are released. [File 5332: Full Text >](#)

p. 360 – Fort Lawton incident

Fort Lawton military police clash with Native American and other protesters in the future Discovery Park on March 8, 1970. On March 8, 1970, about 100 members and sympathizers of United Indian People's Council (later United Indians of All Tribes) confront the 392nd Military Police Company, who are armed with riot gear, while attempting to claim part of Fort Lawton, a 1,100-acre army post in Seattle's Magnolia neighborhood. The United Indians, who are armed with sandwiches, sleeping bags, and cooking utensils, want to create a cultural center for Indians and Alaska natives. They are evicted but set up camp outside the base. The protestors, who are led by Bob Satiacum, a Puyallup, include Bernie Whitebear (1937-2000) of the Colville Confederated Tribe, Leonard Peltier (b. 1944), who goes on to become an American Indian Movement activist and one of America's best known prisoners, and actor Jane Fonda. [File 5513: Full Text >](#)

p. 360 – George Boldt/ Boldt decision

Federal Judge George Boldt issues historic ruling affirming Native American treaty fishing rights on February 12, 1974. On February 12, 1974, Federal Judge George Boldt (1903-1984) issues an historic ruling reaffirming the rights of Washington's Indian tribes to fish in accustomed places. The "Boldt Decision" allocates 50 percent of the annual catch to treaty tribes, which enrages other fishermen. At the same time Judge Boldt denies landless tribes -- among them the Samish, Snoqualmie, Steilacoom, and Duwamish -- federal recognition and treaty rights. [File 5282: Full Text >](#)

A charter committee meets in Seattle to develop a constitution for the Northwest Indian Fisheries Commission on June 24, 1974. On June 24, 1974, a charter committee meets in Seattle to develop a constitution for the Northwest Indian Fisheries Commission. The committee, made up of representatives from several Western Washington tribes, will write a constitution and bylaws for an intertribal fishing commission that will serve the treaty tribes who have recently had their fishing rights reaffirmed in the case *U.S. v. Washington* (commonly known as the Boldt decision). The charter committee was formed in response to the tribes' new role as co-managers of treaty area fisheries, one result of the Boldt decision. The committee envisions the organization as a way to share

tribal financial resources, more efficiently develop fisheries management programs, offer a forum for the tribes to discuss policy and coordinated actions, and improve public understanding of Indian cultures and treaty rights. The commission will serve the Indian committee by developing fisheries management, hatchery support, and public information programs. It will also support the tribes' ongoing efforts to develop working relationships with state agencies and other non-Indians, protect their treaty rights, and restore Western Washington fisheries. [File 9787: Full Text >](#)

Frank, Billy, Jr. (b. 1931) Billy Frank Jr. has served as chair of the Northwest Indian Fisheries Commission (NWIFC) for most of the past 30 years. He has committed his life to protecting his Nisqually people's traditional way of life and to protecting the endangered salmon whose survival is the focus of tribal life. Beginning with his first arrest as a teenager in 1945 for "illegal" fishing on his beloved Nisqually River, he became a leader of a civil disobedience movement that insisted on the treaty rights (the right to fish in "usual and accustomed places") guaranteed to Washington tribes more than a century before. The "fish-ins" and demonstrations Billy Frank Jr. helped lead in the 1960s and 1970s, along with accompanying law suits, led to the Boldt decision of 1974, which restored to the federally recognized tribes the legal right to fish as they always had. Following the Boldt decision, Frank has been a leader in the work to save the river and its fish. In part due to his continuing leadership, Native Americans have finally been recognized as the country's first environmentalists. Billy Frank Jr., who has been honored with national and international humanitarian awards, overcame personal tragedies to help save a precious resource, not only for his people, but for the broader society that was heedlessly destroying it. [File 8929: Full Text >](#)

p.361 – Chicanos

Chicano Movement in Washington: Political Activism in the Puget Sound and Yakima Valley Regions, 1960s-1980s In the late 1960s, the Mexican-American civil rights movement flourished throughout the United States, in 1967 making its presence known in Washington's Yakima Valley. A dramatic shift occurred in the Chicana/o and Latina/o community in Eastern Washington as a previously silent population raised its voice to advocate labor rights and social equity. When Yakima-area students recruited by the University of Washington made their way to Seattle, they brought the energy to initiate the Chicano student movement. The dualistic geography was reflected in the movement's activities, uniting the farm workers' struggle in Eastern Washington with campaigns targeting community and educational objectives in Western Washington. Chicano youth, particularly students at the University of Washington and at campuses throughout the state, generated much of this activism. Students formed local chapters of the United Mexican American Students, the Brown Berets, and Movimiento Estudiantil Chicano de Aztlan (MEChA), among other organizations. They spearheaded the formation of various organizations, committees, programs, and activities, both on and off-campus such as the United Farm Workers Cooperative and the United Farm Workers grape boycott, El Centro de La Raza, community health centers, and the Chicano Education Opportunity Program (EOP) and Chicano Studies center at the University of Washington. [File 7922: Full Text >](#)

p. 361 – United Mexican Students (MEChA)

Chicano students at University of Washington establish United Mexican American Students (later MEChA) on October 1, 1968. On October 1, 1968, Chicano (Mexican American) students at the University of Washington, mostly from the Yakima Valley, establish the United Mexican American Students [UMAS], later changed to MEChA (Movimiento Estudiantil Chicana/Chicano de Aztlan). The group signifies the first major cohort of Mexican American students at the UW. The group will be instrumental in establishing similar chapters throughout the state. [File 7951: Full Text >](#)

Chicano/Latino Activism in Seattle, 1960s-1970s During the late 1960s and early 1970s, many in Seattle's Chicano/Latino community felt an acute isolation. The then small community would see a transformation as a result of the Chicano Movement emerging throughout the United States. Locally, the movement gave rise to institutions such as El Centro de La Raza, which helped build a Chicano community where none had existed before. Alliances with other communities of color were essential to the movement's success. The broad alliance for civil rights that emerged allowed for further progress within the Chicano community at a time when the local population was miniscule compared to the urban Chicano communities of the Southwest. This collaboration across racial lines was a unique development in the Northwest, and is an integral part of the legacy of civil rights activism in the region. The development of the Chicano community also resulted from work done on both the eastern and western sides of the state, with activism in the Yakima Valley providing an impetus for activism in the Puget Sound region as people, especially students, migrated to Western Washington. [File 8013: Full Text >](#)

p. 361 – Women's Liberation Movement

Seattle Radical Women hold what is likely the nation's first women's liberation demonstration on April 19, 1968. On April 19, 1968, Seattle Radical Women protest the appearance of a playboy bunny in what may have been the first women's liberation demonstration in the United States. The Playboy bunny, played by Reagan Wilson, is sponsored by the University of Washington Men's Commission for "Men's Day" at the University of Washington. [File 2153: Full Text >](#)

Seattle Radical Women, one of first women's liberation groups in the United States, forms in November 1967. In November 1967, approximately 30 women meet in the basement of the house of Susan Stern (1943-1976) in the Wallingford district of Seattle to organize one of the first women's liberation groups in the United States. The group's name becomes Seattle Radical Women. [File 2152: Full Text >](#)

Women's Majority Union publishes first issue of *Lilith* in the fall of 1968. In the fall of 1968, Women's Majority Union, a Seattle women's liberation organization, publishes the first issue of *Lilith*. The articles include one on Valerie Solanas, the New York author of S.C.U.M. Manifesto and the person who shot Andy Warhol, an article on professional careers for women, an article on the meaning of "lesbian," an article on whether or not Vietnam and the draft are "women's issues," as well as position papers from the black liberation movement on whether or not African American women should use the birth control pill. [File 2320: Full Text >](#)

p. 361 – Title IX

p. 361 – Dixy Lee Ray

Ray, Dixy Lee (1914-1994) Dr. Dixy Lee Ray was a marine biologist, associate professor at the University of Washington, and director of Seattle's Pacific Science Center. In 1972 President Richard Nixon (1913-1994) appointed her to serve on the Atomic Energy Commission (AEC), which she chaired from 1973 to 1975. In 1976 she became the first woman to be elected governor of Washington. The Seattle-King County Association of Realtors named Dixy Lee Ray First Citizen of 1973. [File 601: Full Text >](#)

Dixy Lee Ray joins Zoology faculty at University of Washington in 1945. In 1945, the scientist and future Washington state governor Dixy Lee Ray (1914-1994) joins the Zoology Department at the University of

Washington, where until the 1960s, she is one of only three women professors in University of Washington science departments. [File 602: Full Text >](#)

Dixy Lee Ray accepts directorship of the Seattle's Pacific Science Center in 1963. In 1963, Dixy Lee Ray (1914-1994), professor of marine biology at University of Washington, accepts the directorship of Seattle's Pacific Science Center, which is in desperate need of strong leadership and funding. She serves for nine years and is widely credited for its survival. Ray is later appointed by Richard Nixon (1913-1994) to the Atomic Energy Commission and serves as governor of the state of Washington from 1977 to 1981. [File 604: Full Text >](#)

State voters elect Dixy Lee Ray as first woman governor of Washington, re-elect Senator Henry Jackson and House incumbents, and prefer Ford to Carter on November 2, 1976. On November 2, 1976, Dixy Lee Ray (1914-1994), a conservative Democrat, wins election as the first woman to be governor of Washington. Senator Henry M. "Scoop" Jackson (1912-1983), who earlier in the year lost a bid for the Democratic presidential nomination, easily wins his fifth Senate term. Jimmy Carter (b. 1924), the Democratic nominee, loses the state to President Gerald Ford (1913-2006), but wins the presidency. Six of Washington's U.S. Representatives win re-election, and Norm Dicks (b. 1940), is elected to an open seat in the Sixth District. [File 5611: Full Text >](#)

Governors of Washington Territory and Washington State This is a complete list of the governors of Washington Territory and Washington state. The list includes birth and death dates and dates of office. Washington Territory was founded on March 2, 1853. Washington became a state on November 11, 1889. [File 5454: Full Text >](#)

p. 361 – Vietnam protests May 1-5, 1969

Thousands protest planned freeway through Seattle's Arboretum on May 4, 1969. On May 4, 1969, several thousand citizens march in Seattle's Arboretum to oppose construction of the R. H. Thomson Expressway. [File 1229: Full Text >](#)

p. 362 – Civil Rights protests / 1968 Gossett, Dixon, Miller at Franklin HS

Black Student Union stages sit-in at University of Washington on May 20, 1968. On May 20, 1968, the University of Washington Black Student Union (BSU) stages a four-hour sit-in at the UW Administration building. The sit-in results in a UW commitment to double black enrollment, to increase financial aid, and to introduce Black Studies courses. [File 1454: Full Text >](#)

p.362 – Civil Rights protests/1969 Black Panthers at Capitol in Olympia

p. 363 – United Construction Workers – Seattle

p. 363 – Tyree Scott (United Construction Workers)

Scott, Tyree (1940-2003) Tyree Scott was a Seattle civil rights and labor leader who broke down barriers to women and minority workers in the construction industry and also worked to improve working conditions for low-income

workers around the world. Although a powerful force for change, he was known as "a quiet, gracious and personable man, totally lacking any capacity for self-inflation" and "more interested in results than rhetoric." [File 8222: Full Text >](#)

p. 364 – Boeing 747

Boeing rolls out first 747 Jumbo Jet in Everett on September 30, 1968. On September 30, 1968, Boeing rolls out the first 747 "Jumbo Jet" in Everett, Washington. [File 1565: Full Text >](#)

Boeing 747 takes maiden flight on February 9, 1969. On February 9, 1969, Boeing flies its 747 model for the first time. The jumbo jet, christened the City of Everett, is the first new Boeing transport not painted in Boeing's traditional prototype colors of brownish-copper and yellow. [File 1181: Full Text >](#)

The Boeing Company wins NASA contract for lunar rover on October 28, 1969. On October 28, 1969, barely three months after Apollo 11 carried the first astronauts to land on the moon, The Boeing Company wins a \$19.6 million contract to design and build a motorized "moon buggy" that will give future astronauts far greater mobility on the lunar surface. Science-fiction writers and far-sighted scientists and engineers have been speculating about what such a vehicle would look like since early in the twentieth century, but it will fall to Boeing to move the concept from speculation to reality. The company does so in the remarkably short span of 17 months. Despite running massively over budget, the first fully operational lunar dune buggy, Rover 1, is ready to fly to the moon when the Apollo 15 mission blasts off from NASA's Kennedy Space Center in Florida atop a Saturn V rocket on the morning of July 26, 1971. On board are astronauts David R. Scott (b. 1932), Alfred M. Worden (b. 1932), and James B. Irwin (1930-1991), and folded away in a compartment on the side of the lunar lander is Boeing's Lunar Roving Vehicle. On July 30, 1971, Scott and Irwin will become the first humans to traverse the lunar surface on wheels, gleefully kicking up clouds of moon dust as they range far from their landing site. [File 10045: Full Text >](#)

p. 364 – Boeing Paine Field

Paine Field (Snohomish County) Built in 1936 and funded by the Works Progress Administration, Everett's Paine Field was originally planned as a commercial airport for Snohomish County. World War II changed the focus when it became a military airfield (1941-1946) and again in 1951 during the Korean Conflict. Paine Field saw mixed military and commercial use until the mid-1960s when Snohomish County took over full management of the site and opened it for new commercial development. In 1966 the Boeing Corporation chose adjacent property to build the 747 and set the direction for aviation commerce at the site for decades. Paine Field has developed into an important aviation and commercial center that has included Alaska Airlines, the Willard Flying School, Curtiss-Wright Flight Systems, Crown Aviation, Honeywell, and Goodrich Aviation Technical Services. Today (2007) Paine Field is managed by Snohomish County and is bordered by Everett and Mukilteo. The airport was named Paine Field in 1941 to honor a local World War I Air Corps pilot, Second Lieutenant Topliff Olin Paine (1893-1922). [File 8266: Full Text >](#)

p. 365 – Washington Public Power Supply System (WPPSS)

Washington Public Power Supply System (WPPSS) The Washington Public Power Supply System (WPPSS) started in the 1950s as a means to guarantee electric power to homes and industry in the Northwest. Well-meaning officials believed that building nuclear power plants was the best way to supply clean and cheap electricity to customers. Events and human inadequacies produced the largest municipal bond default in U.S. history. The

system's acronym, pronounced "whoops," came to represent how not to run a public works project. [File 5482: Full Text >](#)

Governor Dan Evans announces plans to make Washington the nation's leader in nuclear energy development on July 23, 1969. On July 23, 1969, Governor Dan Evans (b. 1925) announces plans to make Washington the nation's leader in nuclear energy development. The governor's Office of Nuclear Energy Development describes a master plan to make Washington "the nuclear progress state." [File 1256: Full Text >](#)

Tacoma City Light joins Washington Public Power Supply System nuclear program in 1972. In 1972, Tacoma joins in construction of two nuclear power plants under construction by the Washington Public Power Supply System -- WPPSS -- in Hanford and at Satsop in Grays Harbor County. The move comes at a time when large-scale hydroelectric development had ended and utilities were turning to thermal sources -- coal, natural gas, and nuclear -- for energy. These reactors and two others will never be built because of massive cost overruns. [File 5155: Full Text >](#)

p. 365 – Earth Day

Earth Day first observed in Seattle on April 22, 1970. On April 22, 1970, the first Earth Day, a nationwide program to spend one day considering issues of environmental protection, is observed in Seattle with teach-ins at the University of Washington and at the Seattle Center. [File 2233: Full Text >](#)

p. 367 – Beatles 1966

Beatles play two concerts at Seattle Center Coliseum on August 25, 1966. On August 25, 1966. The Beatles play two concerts -- one in the afternoon, one in the evening -- at the Seattle Center Coliseum. The two shows draw in a gross take of \$118,071, at the time the largest single-day's gross income for any entertainment show in Seattle history. [File 3985: Full Text >](#)

CHAPTER 12: THE CONTEMPORARY ERA, 1980-Present

p. 370 – Mt. St. Helen's explosion

Geologist warns on April 12, 1968, that Mount St. Helens could erupt at any time. On April 12, 1968, a federal geologist warns that Mount St. Helens could erupt at any time. [File 1381: Full Text >](#)

Mount St. Helens erupts on May 18, 1980. On May 18, 1980 at 8:32 a.m., the earth rumbles underneath Mount St. Helens, a peak in Skamania County in southwestern Washington. Moments later an explosion blasts away a side of the mountain in a major volcanic eruption. The volcano causes the deaths of 57 people. The destruction is widespread but especially severe in Clark County as boiling gas and mud scour 200 square miles of forest and 30 miles of State Route 504. Some 1,000 miles of state highways and roads have to be closed, some for months, and highway repairs alone run into hundreds of millions of dollars. [File 5457: Full Text >](#)

Burlington Northern loses its mountaintop in Mount St. Helens blast of May 18, 1980. At 8:32 a.m. Sunday morning, May 18, 1980, Mount St. Helens in Southwest Washington ends months of geologic suspense and erupts, blasting tons of Burlington Northern Railroad property into the air and ultimately across much of Eastern Washington, Northern Idaho, and Western Montana. [File 8741: Full Text >](#)

Hundreds of frightened and frustrated motorists caught in the Mt. St. Helens ash fall attempt to escape Ritzville on May 20, 1980. On May 20, 1980, two days after the eruption of Mt. St. Helens on May 18, some 2,500 motorists -- more than Ritzville's own population -- are stuck in Ritzville. They are jammed into school gyms, hospital corridors, churches and restaurants. By May 20, hundreds of them are so tired and impatient that they defy police orders and attempt to drive out of Ritzville despite the fact that Interstate 90 and other roads are officially closed. Most of them don't get more than a few miles before the gritty blowing ash forces them to turn back. Many motorists end up stalled on the shoulders and have to be rescued. A few make it as far as the Schrag Rest Area, about 22 miles west, but fewer than 100 make it out. [File 9398: Full Text >](#)

p. 371 – Gary Locke

Locke, Gary Faye (b. 1950) Gary Locke rose through the political ranks from humble, minority beginnings to become King County's first Asian American executive in 1994, the first Asian American governor in the United States in 1996, and the first Asian American to deliver a response to a U.S. president's State of the Union address, in 2003. He has been acknowledged by friend and foe as a quintessential American success story, and has often used his own family's success as a symbol of the American dream. He was characterized as a neo-liberal, a "New Democrat" politician, and he experienced mixed success in public office, handicapped at times by Republican legislative majorities and by economic woes that left the state with huge deficits. In 2003, he announced his retirement from political life. After his second term as governor ended in 2005, he joined the Seattle law office of Davis Wright Tremaine, where he specialized in trade and governmental relations. In February 2009 President Barack Obama (b. 1961) nominated Gary Locke to be United States secretary of Commerce, and he was confirmed by the senate on March 25, 2009. In the summer of 2011 he was appointed and confirmed as the U.S. ambassador to China, the first Chinese American to hold this post. He is married to Mona Lee Locke and they have three children. [File 7830: Full Text >](#)

State voters approve "three-strikes" law and spending limits and King County voters elect Gary Locke as Executive and choose six new members for expanded County Council on November 2, 1993. On November 2, 1993, Washington voters overwhelmingly approve the state's first "three-strikes" law and narrowly approve state spending limits while rejecting a tax rollback measure. King County voters elect six new members to the Metropolitan King County Council, which is expanding from nine to 13 members as a result of the merger between Metro (the Municipality of Metropolitan Seattle) and King County. Gary Locke (b. 1950) defeats two-term incumbent County Executive Tim Hill (b. 1936), while Seattle Mayor Norm Rice (b. 1943) cruises to re-election, bucking an anti-incumbent trend that costs mayors in Spokane, Tacoma, and Everett, as well as King County Executive Hill, their jobs. [File 7829: Full Text >](#)

Washington voters elect Democrats Bill Clinton for president and Gary Locke for governor on November 5, 1996. On November 5, 1996, Washington voters choose Democrats Bill Clinton (b. 1946) for president and Gary Locke (b. 1950) for governor. Statewide ballot measures regarding school vouchers, charter schools, Indian gaming, and term limits are rejected. King, Pierce and Snohomish county voters approve tax increases for Sound Transit light rail and commuter trains. King County votes to make the County Sheriff an elected position rather than being appointed by the County Executive. Residents of Maple Valley and Covington vote to incorporate as cities. [File 7707: Full Text >](#)

p. 371 – Asian Pacific Economic Cooperation (APEC)

President Clinton convenes APEC summit on Blake Island on November 20, 1993. On November 20, 1993, President William J. Clinton convenes a "summit" with 13 leaders of Pacific Rim nations attending the Asia-Pacific Economic Cooperation conference, or APEC, in Seattle. The historic session is held in a Native American-style long

house on Blake Island, a state park in Puget Sound, in Kitsap County. Salmon is served, and it doesn't rain.
[File 5333: Full Text >](#)

p. 371 – World Trade Organization (WTO)

WTO -- History as it Happens A Video by Josh McNichols and Jerome Montalto. This video by Josh McNichols and Jerome Montalto details HistoryLink.org's unexpected role in the 1999 WTO protests in Seattle, protests that were dubbed the "Battle of Seattle." [File 9203: Full Text >](#)

WTO HistoryLink.org webcam of protests and a slideshow of each day (November 30-December 3, 1999, Seattle) This file presents a portion of HistoryLink.org's webcam of WTO protests (November 30-December 3, 1999) and a slideshow showing images from every day of that historic event. The webcam was shot from HistoryLink's office on the fourth floor of the Joshua Green Building (1425 4th Avenue, across from Westlake Park). [File 7117: Full Text >](#)

WTO Meeting and Protests in Seattle (1999) -- Part 1 The Third Ministerial Conference of the World Trade Organization (WTO), held in Seattle from November 30 to December 3, 1999, brought together trade ministers and other officials from the WTO's 135 member countries in an attempt, which proved unsuccessful, to agree on the issues and agenda for a new round of negotiations aimed at further deregulating international trade, particularly in such controversial areas as agriculture, services, and intellectual property. It also brought tens of thousands of protestors to the city's downtown streets. Most governments around the world, leading multinational corporations, and virtually all of Washington state's political and business leaders supported the WTO and "free trade," which they argued benefited society by promoting economic growth. However, internationally and locally labor unions, environmental groups, and activists for many other causes increasingly condemned the WTO for favoring corporate interests over social and environmental concerns. Part 1 of this two-part essay describes the history of the WTO and the many issues and controversies that divided supporters and opponents of free trade in Washington state and around the world and inspired the week of protests that became known as the "battle in Seattle." [File 9183: Full Text >](#)

WTO Meeting and Protests in Seattle (1999) -- Part 2 When Seattle elected officials and civic leaders won the bid to host the Third Ministerial Conference of the World Trade Organization (WTO), they hoped to link Seattle's name to a new round of negotiations aimed at promoting and regulating international trade. What happened during the conference did indelibly link Seattle and the WTO, although not in the way that boosters hoped. Tens of thousands joined in rallies and marches against WTO policies that they said hurt the environment, farmers, workers, consumers, and others. Thousands more successfully (albeit temporarily) "shut down the WTO" through nonviolent civil disobedience. A much smaller group used property destruction to protest the WTO and big corporations. Seattle authorities responded with a massive show of police force and creation of a "no protest zone," drawing widespread criticism for both their lack of preparation and their subsequent crackdown. Part 2 of this two-part essay describes the lead-up to the conference, events during the conference week (which are further detailed in separate HistoryLink timeline essays), and the aftermath for the WTO, which failed to reach any agreement in Seattle, and for protestors and the city. [File 9213: Full Text >](#)

Other WTO essays = 9203, 7117, 9183, 9213, 2136,2138, 2143, 2142, 2141, 2140, 2139, 2144, 2146, 2147, 2991, 2145, 2881

p. 371 – September 11, 2001

Thousands gather at Westlake Park (Seattle) in remembrance of victims of 9-11 terrorist attacks on September 14, 2001. On September 14, 2001, more than 2,000 citizens converge on downtown Seattle's Westlake

Park as part of a national "Day of Remembrance" and participate in a world-wide moment of silence following the terrorist attacks on Washington, D.C., and New York City, which killed more than 3,000 people on September 11, 2001. Public officials, including Governor Gary Locke, King County Executive Ron Sims, and Seattle Mayor Paul Schell, join with prominent Christian, Jewish, and Islamic leaders in expressing the community's grief and in calling for religious and social tolerance. Similar events are held in most other Puget Sound cities, and many Seattle-area citizens, paramedics, and firefighters volunteer to help search for survivors and victims in the rubble of New York City's World Trade Center. [File 3952: Full Text >](#)

p. 371 – War on Terror

Sikh taxi driver is attacked in misguided reaction to September 11 World Trade Center disaster on September 12, 2001. On September 12, 2001, a Sikh taxi driver at Sea-Tac International Airport is attacked after being called a "terrorist." This occurs after terrorist skyjackers identified as Islamic extremists launch a series of attacks on New York City and Washington, D.C., on September 11, 2001, killing more than 3,000 people. The driver's attackers did not recognize that Sikhs are not Muslims or that most followers of the Islamic faith are not religious or political extremists. [File 3578: Full Text >](#)

FBI raids Somali stores Maka Mini Mart and Halal Meats in Seattle on November 7, 2001. On November 7, 2001, the FBI raids the Maka Mini Mart and Halal Meats and the businesses sharing its space as part of an investigation into one of those businesses, Barakat Wire Transfer Service. The business is located in the Rainier Valley in Seattle. The raid occurs just two months after the terrorist attacks of September 11, 2001. There are concerns that the Somali market and wire transfer service are targeted because of their owners' Muslim religion. After several months the FBI drops the investigation and two of the businesses receive partial compensation for confiscated goods and losses suffered due to closure. [File 9642: Full Text >](#)

Grand jury indicts James Ujaama for supporting terrorists on August 28, 2002. On August 28, 2002, a federal grand jury in Seattle indicts James Ujaama for conspiring to support the terrorist organization al-Qaida. In the indictment, the U.S. Government alleges that the 36-year-old Denver native, who grew up in Seattle, provided "training, facilities, computer services, safe houses and personnel," to terrorists. [File 3951: Full Text >](#)

p. 371 – deep-water ports

Deep-draft Ports of Washington Of Washington's 75 public port districts, only 11 -- the ports of Seattle, Grays Harbor, Vancouver, Everett, Tacoma, Bellingham, Kalama, Longview, Olympia, Port Angeles, and Anacortes -- have deep-draft facilities capable of accommodating large ocean-going freight and passenger vessels. All 11 were created in a 15-year period following the 1911 passage of the Port District Act. International trade through these ports, initially dominated by forest products exports, has evolved to encompass a diverse range of goods and materials, with imports far outstripping exports in dollar value. Containerization, which came into widespread use in the early 1960s, revolutionized port operations and brought fundamental change to labor/management relations. Today (2010) Washington's marine terminals move approximately 7 percent of all U.S. exports and 6 percent of all imports and provide tens of thousands of jobs and hundreds of millions of dollars in revenue. Through a century of change and progress, Washington's deep-draft ports have remained the primary portals through which Washington connects to the world economy. [File 9529: Full Text >](#)

Port of Seattle, Founding of The creation of the Port of Seattle on September 5, 1911, was the culmination of a long struggle for control of Seattle's waterfront and harbor, a struggle whose roots stretched all the way back to the

city's founding 60 years earlier. Seattle had grown from a tiny frontier settlement to a bustling trade center due in large part to the transcontinental rail lines and transoceanic water routes that met along its central waterfront. But the railroad corporations that helped spur Seattle's growth also dominated its waterfront, physically and economically. Their tangle of tracks and trains along the aptly named Railroad Avenue separated the city from its harbor. The rail companies also owned most of the docks and warehouses, so they exercised a stranglehold over Seattle's trade. With competing firms each pursuing its own self-interest, coordinated harbor improvements were impossible to achieve. For more than 20 years, reformers sought to end the railroad stranglehold, and modernize and rationalize Seattle's harbor, by establishing publicly owned and operated port facilities. [File 1003: Full Text >](#)

p. 376 – western Washington farming

p. 376 – eastern Washington farming

p. 376 – Columbia Basin Irrigation Project

First irrigation water reaches Pasco on May 15, 1948. On May 15, 1948, a Pasco farm receives the first water pumped from the Columbia Basin Irrigation Project. At about 11:15 a.m., Pasco Judge B. B. Horrigan gives the signal to open the canal gate. The water results from decades of dreams and the completion of Grand Coulee Dam. [File 7555: Full Text >](#)

Beginnings of the Columbia Basin Reclamation Project: A Reminiscence by W. Gale Matthews In early 1952, W. Gale Matthews -- a resident of Grant County since 1890 and, at the time of this account, President of the Grant County Title Abstract Company -- provided his memories of the beginning of the Columbia Basin Reclamation Project. This project to irrigate large parts of the Columbia Basin in Eastern Washington famously gave birth to Grand Coulee Dam, which opened in 1941. Matthews account was transcribed from a speech he gave to the Grant County Historical Society in early 1952, and was edited by Eric L. Flom. Matthews tells of the early ridicule facing this proposal and the war of ideas waged between dam proponents and others advocating a rival irrigation scheme. [File 7963: Full Text >](#)

Columbia National Wildlife Refuge The Columbia Basin Irrigation Project did more than turn half a million acres of arid Eastern Washington into lush farmland. It also created an enticing stopover for millions of migrating birds. Land once dominated by sagebrush and dust now sparkles with reservoirs. Seepage from canals and pipes has given rise to marshes, bogs, and ponds. Drainage ditches, designed to carry excess water from farm fields, function as creeks in a landscape redesigned by hydraulics. These manufactured lakes and artificial wetlands form the heart of the Columbia National Wildlife Refuge, a 30,000-acre haven for more than 200 species of birds and waterfowl, including many that previously bypassed the region entirely. [File 7459: Full Text >](#)

p. 376, 379 – wine industry

Wine in Washington State Wine grapes were -- along with apples -- the very *first* cultivated fruits in the Pacific Northwest. Initially planted here in 1827, both were cherished by early pioneering settlers, but whereas apples became a lucrative farm commodity early on, the grape's long and winding path to success was a bit rockier. Only in recent decades has both the art and science of viticulture (grape growing) and enology (wine making) really advanced to the point where Washington-grown grapes now share a wide reputation (along with apples) as some of the world's tastiest -- and the finest locally made wines now enjoy global esteem for their excellence. [File 8658: Full Text >](#)

p. 396 –Microsoft

Microsoft Corporation In 1975, two young men from Seattle founded a company that would be to the Computer Age what the Ford Motor Company was to the Automobile Age. Like Henry Ford, William H. Gates III (b. 1953) and Paul Allen (b. 1953) transformed a new technology by building on the inventions of others, creating a mass market for what had once been a novelty for the few. Their company -- originally called Micro-soft, an abbreviation for microcomputer software -- helped change the living, working, and recreational habits of hundreds of millions of people around the world. [File 2294: Full Text >](#)

Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation The Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation was formally established in the summer of 1999. The new organization consolidated previous activities dating back to 1994, including family giving, the William H. Gates Foundation, the Microsoft Corporation's "Libraries Online" initiative, the Gates Library Foundation and later Gates Learning Foundation. With an endowment estimated at more than \$22 billion in early 2000, it ranked as the largest philanthropic trust in the United States. Its contribution strategy focuses on global health and population control programs, libraries and access to information technology, education reform and minority scholarships, and a wide range of Pacific Northwest institutions and programs. [File 2907: Full Text >](#)

Gates, William H. (Bill) (b. 1955) William H. (Bill) Gates was co-founder and CEO of Microsoft Corp. As such, he not only accumulated a fortune -- in 2013 he was the richest person in the world, with a net worth of \$72.1 billion -- but was a key player in the computer revolution that has fundamentally changed the nature of business and culture in the United States and around the world. Although Bill Gates began his career with the benefits of being the scion of an accomplished and well-off family, with excellent education opportunities and access to a broad network of personal connections, no one has argued that his success was not primarily the result of his own talents and efforts. In addition to co-founding Microsoft, he co-founded the Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation and since 2008 has devoted his energies to that large philanthropy. [File 10421: Full Text >](#)

Gates and Allen start the firm that grows into Microsoft in the fall of 1975. In the fall of 1975, William Gates III and Paul Allen (b. 1953) form the company that grows into Microsoft. [File 3416: Full Text >](#)

Microsoft Corporation offers first shares to the public on March 13, 1986. On March 13, 1986, Microsoft offers the first shares to the public. Share prices rise from \$26 to \$29 before closing at \$27.25. [File 2000: Full Text >](#)

United States sues Microsoft Corporation on May 18, 1998. On May 18, 1998, after a three-year investigation, the Department of Justice and the attorneys general of 20 states (later dropped to 19) sue the Microsoft Corporation for violating the Sherman Antitrust Act. Attorney General Janet Reno charges that the company has a "chokehold" on the market for Internet software and illegally uses its monopoly power to limit consumer choice. The suit was triggered by Microsoft's decision to "bundle" its Internet browser, called Explorer, into its Windows operating system that powers 90 percent of the world's personal computers. [File 2297: Full Text >](#)

Microsoft stock splits for the eighth time on March 26, 1999. On March 26, 1999, Microsoft Corporation stock splits for the eighth time since the stock became available to the public on March 13, 1986. [File 2298: Full Text >](#)

Federal Judge Thomas Penfield Jackson declares Microsoft a monopoly on November 5, 1999. On November 5, 1999, Federal District Court Judge Thomas Penfield Jackson issues a formal finding of fact that Microsoft Corporation "enjoys monopoly power" in the market for computer operating systems. The ruling is a key stage in a federal anti-trust complaint that went to trial in Washington, D.C., on October 19, 1998. Barring revision or settlement, the finding of fact could lead to punitive and/or corrective orders intended to reduce the market dominance of Windows and other Microsoft products. [File 1987: Full Text >](#)

Steve Ballmer takes over as CEO of Microsoft on January 13, 2000. On January 13, 2000, at a press conference, Bill Gates (b. 1953) turns over leadership of Microsoft to Steve Ballmer (b. 1956). Gates retains his position as

chairman of the board and takes the title of chief software architect, while Ballmer adds the role of CEO to his existing position as president of the company. [File 10426: Full Text >](#)

Lakeside School (Seattle) Lakeside is an independent school located on a 33-acre New England-style campus in north Seattle. Long known for its reputation for educating children of the elite, this premier independent school of the Pacific Northwest has, through the decades, evolved into one with a much wider and more liberal mission. From an enrollment of 100 boys, all of them white, in the 1920s, it has now (2013) an enrollment of almost 800 students, half of whom are girls. This 5th through 12th grade school has 107 faculty members of which 20.5 percent are people of color as are 51 percent of the students. Some 29 percent of the students receive financial aid. In addition to a rigorous academic curriculum, the school requires credits in a strong athletic program, outdoor education, community service, and the arts. [File 10621: Full Text >](#)

p. 396 – Amazon.com

p. 397 – Real Networks

Rock Music -- Seattle In the winter of 1991-1992, the Seattle rock-music scene suddenly became the darling of the global music industry. This "overnight success" was 15 years in the making. [File 2374: Full Text >](#)

p. 397 - Expedia.com

p. 398 – Costco Wholesale Company

First Costco discount warehouse opens in Seattle on September 15, 1983. On September 15, 1983, the first Costco discount warehouse opens on 4th Avenue S in Seattle. The warehouse offers food, appliances, clothes, office supplies, and other goods at prices below general retail levels. The company is headquartered in Issaquah. [File 3609: Full Text >](#)

Brotman, Jeffrey H. (b. 1942) and Susan R. (b. 1949) Jeffrey and Susan Brotman have been one of the most dynamic public-spirited couples contributing to the region's well being, their efforts ranging over the arts, health care, education, and diversity. Jeffrey Brotman, born in Tacoma, Washington, into a family of retailers, is co-founder and chairman of Costco Wholesale Corporation, the largest membership warehouse club chain in the world. He was appointed a University of Washington Regent in 1998, reappointed in 2004, and named board president in 2004. Susan (Thraikill) Brotman, born in Hamilton, Montana, was a retail executive prior to her marriage, and has served as an officer for a variety of non-profit institutions, from the Seattle Art Museum and Pacific Northwest Ballet to the University of Washington Foundation. The Brotmans have given millions of dollars to various causes. The Seattle-King County Association of Realtors named Jeffrey and Susan Brotman First Citizens of 2005. [File 8172: Full Text >](#)

p. 398 – Nordstrom

Nordstrom Department Store John Nordstrom (1871-1963) was a Swedish immigrant who arrived in America with \$5 in his pocket. He worked his way across the country, ended up in Alaska, and staked a claim in the gold fields. The claim was disputed, and he knew he was in trouble so felt quite delighted when he was offered \$30,000

for it. He came to Seattle and went into the shoe business with his friend Carl Wallin. Wallin and Nordstrom opened in downtown Seattle in 1901, and was the beginning of Nordstrom, the downtown department store. Nordstrom gradually expanded and opened stores in several states. By 1985, Nordstrom surpassed the sales of Saks Fifth Avenue in New York to become the largest specialty store chain in the country. [File 1677: Full Text >](#)

p. 398 – Starbucks Coffee

Starbucks Coffee opens first store in Pike Place Market in April 1971. In April 1971, Starbucks Coffee opens for business in the Pike Place Market, selling high-quality coffee, dark-roasted in small batches, the European way. Starbucks does not sell or brew coffee by the cup, but sometimes offers brewed samples. [File 2075: Full Text >](#)

p. 398 – Howard Schultz

Barry Ackerley sells Seattle SuperSonics to an investment group led by Howard Schultz (Starbucks) on January 11, 2001. On January 11, 2001, Barry Ackerley, owner of the Seattle SuperSonics NBA franchise, reaches an agreement to sell the team to an investment group led by Starbucks Corporation founder Howard Schultz. The sale price is reported to be \$200 million and includes the WNBA's Seattle Storm as well as Full House Entertainment, the business arm of the Sonics and Storm. [File 2943: Full Text >](#)

p. 301 – Washington state Department of Transportation (WSDOT)

Transportation chronology: Moving Washington for a Century -- 100 Years in the History of the Washington State Department of Transportation (WSDOT) This chronology marks the major milestones in the evolution of Washington's transportation system over a century of progress, challenge, and innovation. [File 7273: Full Text >](#)

p. 301 – Tacoma Narrows Bridge

Bridges of Washington State: A Slideshow Primer of Technology Through Time In Washington state, bridges are ubiquitous. As of August 4, 2010, there were 9,415 bridges on the Washington State Department of Transportation (WSDOT) inventory. These include all bridges 10 feet and longer, all bridges owned by state and local agencies, and docks and transfer facilities owned by Washington State Ferries. The inventory includes only a few federally owned bridges and it only includes railroad bridges that cross public roadways. Bridges are added and removed from the inventory every year at the rate of about 100 a year. Forest roads and hiking trails also incorporate bridges. This slideshow offers a brief overview of Washington bridges and bridge technology as it evolved over time. [File 8860: Full Text >](#)

Tacoma Narrows Bridge is dedicated on July 1, 1940. On July 1, 1940, the Tacoma Narrows Bridge is dedicated and opens to traffic. It is a clear day with blue skies, and some 10,000 people turn out for the occasion. The bridge, which connects Tacoma to the Kitsap Peninsula, promises to stimulate the economy of Tacoma. Everyone rejoices, and marvels at its slender beauty. Later its tendency to "gallop" will thrill joy riders and worry engineers. Four months later, on November 7, 1940, the Tacoma Narrows Bridge will collapse. [File 7139: Full Text >](#)

Tacoma Narrows Bridge collapses on November 7, 1940. On November 7, 1940, at about 11 a.m., the Tacoma Narrows Bridge collapses in a high wind. The bridge spanned the Tacoma Narrows, a deep, narrow section of Puget Sound that separates Pierce County from the Kitsap Peninsula. The bridge collapses four months and seven days after it is dedicated. It had severely oscillated even as it was being built: Workers on the bridge sucked lemons to combat seasickness and dubbed it "Galloping Gertie." The structure's wave-like motions made it a thrill to drive across -- joyriders increased traffic on the bridge from the beginning -- but no one expected it to collapse. The bridge disaster was a tragedy for Tacoma, which lost the retail trade from Kitsap County and a connection to the Bremerton Navy Yard during the years of World War II. The engineering failure became a textbook case and revolutionized designs and procedures for building suspension bridges. [File 5048: Full Text >](#)

p. 402 – major Washington ports

Deep-draft Ports of Washington Of Washington's 75 public port districts, only 11 -- the ports of Seattle, Grays Harbor, Vancouver, Everett, Tacoma, Bellingham, Kalama, Longview, Olympia, Port Angeles, and Anacortes -- have deep-draft facilities capable of accommodating large ocean-going freight and passenger vessels. All 11 were created in a 15-year period following the 1911 passage of the Port District Act. International trade through these ports, initially dominated by forest products exports, has evolved to encompass a diverse range of goods and materials, with imports far outstripping exports in dollar value. Containerization, which came into widespread use in the early 1960s, revolutionized port operations and brought fundamental change to labor/management relations. Today (2010) Washington's marine terminals move approximately 7 percent of all U.S. exports and 6 percent of all imports and provide tens of thousands of jobs and hundreds of millions of dollars in revenue. Through a century of change and progress, Washington's deep-draft ports have remained the primary portals through which Washington connects to the world economy. [File 9529: Full Text >](#)

p. 405-7 – City of Seattle's major tourist attractions

Opera House

5th Avenue Theater

Fifth (5th) Avenue Theatre (Seattle) The 5th Avenue Theatre, built by Pacific Theatres, Inc., was easily one of the most elegant and lavishly appointed theaters on the West Coast when it opened in September 1926. The venue was located in downtown Seattle on 5th Avenue, and formed a part of the new Skinner Building. Designed by architect Robert C. Reamer (1873-1938), with interior design supervised by Gustav Liljestrom of San Francisco, the theater embraced Seattle's growing connection to the Far East by employing a Chinese theme, debuting a full eight months before the now-famous Grauman's (now Mann's) Chinese Theatre in Hollywood first opened. [File 3750: Full Text >](#)

Seattle's 5th Avenue Theatre lights up a new marquee on December 3, 2009. On December 3, 2009, crowds gather at the 5th Avenue Theatre in downtown Seattle to celebrate "first light" for the theater's new marquee, which replaces one removed during theater renovations three decades earlier. The marquee, which is just over 57 feet in height, is not an exact replica of the original, but is quite similar, and restores the theater's exterior glamour and éclat. The prime mover behind the project is Christabel Gough, daughter of Roger L. Stevens, a businessman, famed Broadway producer, and patron of the arts. Gough donated \$300,000 for the project in memory of her father and his longtime friend and business associate, James M. Ryan, both of whom had supported the drive to restore and renovate the historic theater in 1979. The new marquee is designed by Eric Levine and Yusuke Ito of NBBJ and built by CREO Industrial Arts in Everett. [File 10062: Full Text >](#)

Downtown Historic Theatre District (Seattle) Cybertour This is a cybertour of Seattle's Downtown Historic Theatre District as it existed at the time of its designation on December 6, 2011. The Downtown Historic Theatre District was created to support the preservation, promotion, and maintenance of Seattle's downtown historic theaters. Five venues are included in the district: Town Hall Seattle (formerly the Fourth Church of Christ, Scientist), the 5th Avenue Theatre, A Contemporary Theatre ACT/Eagles Auditorium, the Paramount Theatre, and the Moore Theatre. This tour was written and curated by Paula Becker. Map by Marie McCaffrey. Preparation of this feature was made possible by the Seattle Office of Arts & Cultural Affairs, and 4Culture King County lodging tax. [File 10149: Full Text >](#)

Paramount Theater

The Seattle (Paramount) Theatre opens on March 1, 1928. On March 1, 1928, the Seattle Theatre, one of the last downtown entertainment venues to open before the Great Depression, debuted to the public. Featuring the elaborate Publix stage show *A Merry Widow Revue* and the Bebe Daniels silent film *Feel My Pulse*, the house more than lived up to its billing as "the show divine at 9th and Pine." Now known as the Paramount Theatre, the venue continues to showcase a variety of formal entertainments, including film, theater, and concert engagements. [File 3945: Full Text >](#)

Seattle's historic Paramount Theatre installs new marquee on October 7, 2009. On October 7, 2009, workers install a sparkling new vertical marquee on the historic Paramount Theatre at 9th Avenue and Pine Street in Seattle. The marquee, fabricated by The Sign Factory of Kirkland, Washington, is a detailed reproduction of the one that has been in place since 1930, when the two-year-old Seattle Theatre was renamed the "Paramount" and the marquee relettered to reflect the change. After that, the six-story-high sign remained in place for another 79 years. Over that time, Seattle's weather took a slow but relentless toll on the marquee, the exterior of which was made of sheet metal. Paint chips and blisters, metal rusts, stopgap repairs did little but buy time, and by 2009 the accumulated damage proved too great to remedy. The Seattle Theatre Group, which owns the Paramount, raised money from government, foundations, and the public to finance a new marquee. The Sign Factory of Kirkland, which maintained the old sign for several years, was selected to fabricate the replica, which has an outer skin made almost entirely of aluminum, and electrical and lighting upgrades to provide increased brilliance with a significant reduction in cost and energy consumption. Upon completion, the 65-foot-long sign is trucked to the Paramount site where, over just two days, the old marquee is removed and the new one is installed. [File 10069: Full Text >](#)

Pacific Science Center

Seattle Neighborhoods: Seattle Center -- Thumbnail History The Seattle Center, located north of downtown at the foot of Queen Anne Hill, is a cultural and entertainment campus built in 1962 for the Seattle World's Fair. The World's Fair helped to transform Seattle from a rather provincial backwater into a genuinely cosmopolitan port city, and it created a lasting legacy of important civic buildings for the arts, professional sports (the Seattle SuperSonics play at KeyArena), and major community events, such as the annual Bumbershoot arts festival that takes place over Labor Day weekend. [File 1321: Full Text >](#)

Key Arena

Seattle Neighborhoods: Seattle Center -- Thumbnail History The Seattle Center, located north of downtown at the foot of Queen Anne Hill, is a cultural and entertainment campus built in 1962 for the Seattle World's Fair. The

World's Fair helped to transform Seattle from a rather provincial backwater into a genuinely cosmopolitan port city, and it created a lasting legacy of important civic buildings for the arts, professional sports (the Seattle SuperSonics play at KeyArena), and major community events, such as the annual Bumbershoot arts festival that takes place over Labor Day weekend. [File 1321: Full Text >](#)

Seattle Art Museum

Seattle Art Museum opens in Volunteer Park on June 23, 1933. On June 23, 1933, the Seattle Art Museum opens in Volunteer Park as the result of a gift to the City of Seattle from Richard E. Fuller (1897-1976), president of the Art Institute of Seattle, and his mother Margaret (MacTavish) Fuller (1860-1953). The Fullers paid for the building and the City provided maintenance and utilities. The Art Institute of Seattle managed art activities. In December 1991, when the Seattle Art Museum opens in downtown Seattle, this museum will become the Seattle Asian Art Museum. [File 2082: Full Text >](#)

Seattle Art Museum's *Hammering Man* falls on September 28, 1991. On September 28, 1991, *Hammering Man*, a 48-foot-tall metal sculpture created by Jonathan Borofsky for the entrance to the new Seattle Art Museum, falls and is damaged. The 22,000-pound steel and aluminum figure is being hoisted into place by a crane when a lift-strap breaks. The sculpture falls just one foot, but has to be returned to its foundry in Connecticut for repair. [File 3541: Full Text >](#)

Seattle Art Museum opens downtown on December 5, 1991. On December 5, 1991, the Seattle Art Museum opens downtown at 1st Avenue and University Street. The \$64 million structure has 155,000 square feet, four times the space of the old museum at Volunteer Park. New galleries display African art, Northwest Native American art, modern art, photography, and Northwest artists. [File 3540: Full Text >](#)[Full Text >](#)

Seattle Art Museum's Olympic Sculpture Park opens to the public on January 20-21, 2007. On January 20-21, 2007, the Seattle Art Museum's Olympic Sculpture Park opens to the public with a community-wide free celebration. Located on land formerly used by Unocal (Union Oil of California) Corporation for storing, transferring, and shipping gasoline and diesel fuels, the site required a massive toxic cleanup. Designed by the New York firm of Weiss/Manfredi and featuring a panoramic view of Puget Sound and the Olympic mountain range, the Olympic Sculpture Park inaugurates a third campus for the Seattle Art Museum and marks the culmination of more than a decade of planning. [File 8130: Full Text >](#)

Pioneer Square

Pioneer Square Cybertour A guided photographic cybertour of Pioneer Square, Seattle's First Neighborhood and a National Historic District. Also available as a [printable walking tour](#) (PDF format). Written by Walt Crowley, produced by Chris Goodman, and funded by the City of Seattle. [File 7055: Full Text >](#)

Pike Place Market

Pike Place Market Cybertour This is a photographic cybertour of Seattle's Pike Place Market. Also available as a [printable walking tour](#) (PDF format). Prepared by Walt Crowley and produced by Chris Goodman and Marie McCaffrey. Presented by the City of Seattle, Office of Economic Development, Tourism Division. [File 7053: Full Text >](#)

Seattle's Pike Place Market opens on August 17, 1907. On August 17, 1907, about eight farmers sell their produce from wagons and carts to large crowds at Pike Place, just west of 1st Avenue in downtown Seattle. The farmer's market comes into being in opposition to unethical commission houses which pay the farmer little and charge the consumer much. The first market immediately sells out, and marks the beginning of the Pike Place Market, which as of this writing (1999) continues to flourish. [File 1949: Full Text >](#)

Central Association announces plans on February 14, 1963, to tear down Pike Place Market. On February 14, 1963, the Central Association of Seattle announces a plan to tear down all buildings in the Pike Place Market area of Seattle and to replace the Market with parking, office and hotel space, and stalls for vendors. Association President Ben Ehrlichman (1895-1971) describes the planned development as "a visitor and tourism attraction quite equal to the Los Angeles Farmers' Market." Opponents to the plan begin to speak out immediately. [File 1425: Full Text >](#)

Victor Steinbrueck leads a protest rally for Pike Place Market on March 12, 1969. On March 12, 1969, architect-preservationist Victor Steinbrueck (1911-1985) leads a rally at the Moore Theater to protest the urban renewal plan that would demolish Seattle's Pike Place Market. [File 1192: Full Text >](#)

Seattle City Council votes for the urban renewal of Pike Place Market on June 17, 1969. On June 17, 1969, the Seattle City Council votes unanimously for urban renewal of the Pike Place Market. [File 1244: Full Text >](#)

Voters preserve Seattle's historic Pike Place Market on November 2, 1971. On November 2, 1971, Seattle voters approve Initiative No.1 which establishes a large historic district to "preserve, improve and restore the Pike Place Market" and "prohibit alterations, demolition, or construction" without approval of a 12 member commission. The measure passes by a vote of 76,369 to 53,264, a three-to-two majority, and ends an eight-year controversy over the fate of the Market. [File 1426: Full Text >](#)

Smith Tower

Smith Tower (Seattle) When Seattle's pyramid-capped Smith Tower officially opened on July 4, 1914, its greatest claim to fame was its 462-foot height. It was originally one of the tallest buildings in the country outside of New York, and was the tallest west of Ohio. This territorial hegemony steadily shrank as higher buildings marched westward: By 1923 it was the tallest west of Chicago, by 1931 the tallest west of Kansas City, and by 1943 the tallest west of Dallas, but it did remain the tallest building west of the Rockies for nearly half a century. At birth it was nearly twice as tall as the previously highest building in town (the 247-foot clock tower of the King Street Station), but by 1985 it was less than half the height of the 937-foot Bank of America Tower (originally Columbia Center.) [File 4310: Full Text >](#)

Smith Tower officially opens in Seattle on July 4, 1914. On July 4, 1914, the 462-foot-high Smith Tower, located in downtown Seattle, is officially opened by its owner, Burns Lyman Smith (1880-1941). Located at 506 2nd Avenue, the building has taken three and a half years to construct. The Smith Tower is built with 1,400 doors, 2,000 windows, and 40,000 feet of molding. The building sits on 1,276 Raymond concrete piles measuring 22 feet in length. The American Bridge Company produced the tower's steel in a Pittsburgh plant and shipped it on 164 railroad cars, each carrying about 28 tons. [File 5370: Full Text >](#)

Space Needle

Space Needle (Seattle) The Space Needle, a modernistic totem of the Seattle World's Fair, was conceived by Eddie Carlson (1911-1990) as a doodle in 1959 and given form by architects John Graham Jr. (1908-1991), Victor Steinbrueck (1911-1985), and John Ridley. When King County declined to fund the project, five private investors,

Bagley Wright (1924-2011), Ned Skinner (1920-1988), Norton Clapp (1906-1995), John Graham Jr., and Howard S. Wright, took over and built the 605-foot tower in less than a year. The Needle opened shortly before the Century 21 Exposition on March 24, 1962. Owners added a second restaurant-reception room at the 100-foot level in 1982. It was designated as an official historic landmark on April 19, 1999. [File 1424: Full Text >](#)

Seattle holds groundbreaking ceremony for the Space Needle on April 17, 1961. On April 17, 1961, ground breaking ceremonies for the Space Needle are held. It will be the tallest structure in the city, topping the Smith Tower by 86 feet. The major investors in this private venture are Bagley Wright (1924-2011), Ned Skinner, Norton Clapp, John Graham, the architect, and Howard S. Wright Construction, the main contractor. [File 722: Full Text >](#)

Space Needle officially becomes a City of Seattle historic landmark on April 19, 1999. On April 19, 1999, Seattle's Space Needle officially becomes a city historic landmark, perpetuating the legacy of the Seattle Center as a distinctive local institution. [File 1443: Full Text >](#)

Woodland Park Zoo

Woodland Park Zoo Seattle's Woodland Park Zoo, now regarded as one of the nation's best, began with a small menagerie on Guy Phinney's sprawling Woodland Park estate between Phinney Ridge and Green Lake. In 1899, the City of Seattle purchased the estate, and in 1903 John C. Olmsted (1852-1920) designed the first plan for its permanent "Zoological Gardens." In 1932, construction of Aurora Avenue N (Highway 99) severed the zoo from "lower" Woodland Park. Neighborhood opposition to improvements authorized by the 1968 Forward Thrust bond election led to a new Long-Range Plan in 1976, which was implemented by director David Hancocks. The plan's natural "bioclimatic" exhibits revolutionized zoo design and won numerous international awards. King County voters approved additional zoo improvements in 1985. They were completed in 1999 under the guidance of director David L. Towne. [File 1481: Full Text >](#)

Woodland Park Zoo opens in 1904. In 1904, the Woodland Park Zoo opens. The zoo is located in North Seattle on the west side of Green Lake, north of the Fremont neighborhood on Phinney Ridge. It comprises land and a menagerie purchased by the City of Seattle from Nellie Phinney, widow of Guy Phinney (1852-1893). [File 3277: Full Text >](#)

Seahawk football

Seattle Seahawks The Seattle Seahawks professional football team was born in 1974 as one of two new franchises added that year by the National Football League. A group of Seattle businessmen led by the Nordstrom family was awarded the franchise. Fans gobbled up the available 59,000 season tickets. The Seahawks began playing in 1976 with the newly built Kingdome as their home field. In their early years, they were known for scrappiness and daring but never made the playoffs under their original head coach, Jack Patera (b. 1933). His successor, Chuck Knox (b. 1932), arrived in 1983 and led the Seahawks to the American Football Conference (AFC) championship game in his first season. Two years later the team entered a 20-year year stretch without a playoff victory. That drought spanned the tenures of three owners and four head coaches. It included a stadium controversy and even an attempted move out of town. Fans' patience was rewarded in 2005. With Mike Holmgren (b. 1948) coaching, the Seahawks won a franchise record 13 out of 16 regular-season games and made their first Super Bowl appearance. The team won four consecutive division titles under Holmgren but suffered a losing season in 2008, his final year. A major rebuilding effort began with the 2010 hiring of head coach Pete Carroll (b. 1951), who in his first season led the team to an improbable division championship and a playoff victory that was literally seismic. The drafting of Russell Wilson (b. 1988) in 2012 gave the Seahawks a championship-caliber quarterback. A last-second loss in that season's

division playoffs led to a dominating 2013 season, capped by a one-sided Super Bowl victory. The ensuing parade was considered the biggest gathering in Seattle's history. [File 10217: Full Text >](#)

National Football League awards Seattle a franchise for future Seahawks on December 5, 1974. On December 5, 1974, National Football League Commissioner Pete Rozelle awarded the "Seattle Professional Football" consortium, led by Lloyd W. Nordstrom, a franchise to organize the future Seattle Seahawks. The franchise cost \$16 million, underwritten by a who's who of Seattle business leaders, including, in addition to Nordstrom, industrialist D. E. "Ned" Skinner, contractor Howard S. Wright, retailer M. Lamont Bean, and entrepreneur Herman Sarkowsky, who served as the group's chief operating officer. The Seahawks were so named in June 1975 and debuted in the Kingdome on September 12, 1976. [File 7633: Full Text >](#)

Washington state voters approve funding for new Seahawks Stadium on June 17, 1997. On June 17, 1997, a narrow 50.8 percent majority of state voters participating in a special election approve a \$300 million funding package for a new Seahawks Stadium to replace the Kingdome. Microsoft co-founder Paul Allen (b. 1953) finances the campaign and later follows through on his pledge to purchase and revitalize the Seahawks National Football League franchise. He also commits \$100 million of his own funds to the new stadium, which formally opened on July 20, 2002. [File 3582: Full Text >](#)

Seattle Seahawks play in the Super Bowl on February 5, 2006. On February 5, 2006, the Seattle Seahawks play in Super Bowl XL (No. 40), marking their first appearance in the National Football League's championship game. They face the Pittsburgh Steelers in Detroit's Ford Field. Although they have a better regular-season record and a stronger offense than the Steelers, the Seahawks make too many mistakes and give up three long plays. That combination, along with some disputed calls by the officials, results in a 21-10 Pittsburgh victory. [File 10219: Full Text >](#)

Seattle Seahawks win Super Bowl in a rout on February 2, 2014. On February 2, 2014, the Seattle Seahawks defeat the Denver Broncos 43-8 in Super Bowl XLVIII, giving the team its first National Football League (NFL) championship. The game pits Denver's record-setting offense against Seattle's top-ranked defense, with Denver considered a slight favorite. Instead, the game is a rout, with the Seahawks scoring the game's first 36 points and becoming the youngest team ever to win the Lombardi Trophy. The one-sided victory triggers celebrations throughout Seattle. [File 10730: Full Text >](#)

Super Bowl victory parade for Seattle Seahawks attracts hundreds of thousands on February 5, 2014. On February 5, 2014, hundreds of thousands of fans pack a 2.5-mile parade route through downtown Seattle in sunny, sub-freezing weather to celebrate the Seattle Seahawks winning the Super Bowl. The event is joyous, with the only problems being overloads of the area's transportation and communications systems. Estimates of the crowd size vary, but the turnout generally is considered to be the biggest gathering in Seattle's history. [File 10754: Full Text >](#)

Qwest Field

Seahawks Stadium opens in Seattle on July 20, 2002. At noon on July 20, 2002, Seahawks Stadium opens as the new home as for the Seattle Seahawks of the National Football League and the Seattle Sounders soccer team. Hundreds of fans wait for as long as two hours to get a first tour of the 67,000-seat facility. [File 4006: Full Text >](#)

Seattle, King County, and State of Washington suspend lawsuit against baseball's American League on February 14, 1976, clearing way for Mariners. On February 14, 1976, the City of Seattle, King County, and the State of Washington conditionally settle their joint lawsuit against the American League of Professional Baseball Clubs. The settlement is announced after the Seattle City Council, the last holdout, votes 7-1 to accept its terms. Under the agreement, the American League will expand, allotting a team to Seattle as a replacement for the ill-fated Seattle Pilots, who played only the 1969 season before being moved to Milwaukee, triggering the lawsuit. The case

took nearly six years to come to trial, which then ran for about a month before settlement is reached. Rather than being dismissed, the legal action will be placed in abeyance pending the league's fulfillment of the settlement terms and the establishment of a new baseball team in Seattle. William L. Dwyer (1929-2002), a highly respected Seattle trial attorney who will later become a federal district court judge, represents the State and County in the suit. [File 10321: Full Text >](#)

Mariner Baseball

Seattle MarinersThe Seattle Mariners were created grudgingly by Major League Baseball as the result of a lawsuit. They played their first games in 1977, then took 14 years to have a winning season. Their first three decades were mostly a struggle, an uneven melodrama marked by unhappy owners, ineffective managers, bad moves, and fan frustration. But amid the angst, they boasted four of the sport's brightest stars: Ken Griffey Jr., Randy Johnson, Alex Rodriguez, and Ichiro Suzuki. They also managed to produce a pair of seasons so extraordinary that they turned Seattle, which traditionally had favored football among its sports, into a baseball town -- at least temporarily. From those bursts of excitement came an open-air stadium and a rise in the value of the franchise from baseball's lowest to one of its highest. [File 9560: Full Text >](#)

Seattle Mariners play their first baseball game in Seattle on April 6, 1977. On April 6, 1977, the Seattle Mariners play their first baseball game in Seattle. They meet the California Angels in the Kingdome and lose 7-0. [File 3419: Full Text >](#)

A group of local investors announces plans to buy the Seattle Mariners on January 23, 1992. On January 23, 1992, a group of local investors led by a Japanese billionaire announces plans to buy the Seattle Mariners, which would thwart a plan to move the team to Florida. Calling itself the Baseball Club of Seattle, the group has members mostly from Nintendo of America, Microsoft, and McCaw Cellular Communications. But the biggest investor by far is Hiroshi Yamauchi (b. 1927), head of Nintendo in Japan. Major League Baseball's commissioner cites a policy opposing foreign investment. Getting the necessary approval takes nearly six months, but finally the sale is completed and the new owners are able to declare the Mariners "Safe at Home." [File 9562: Full Text >](#)

Seattle Mariners complete regular season with 116 wins, and tie for best record in Major League baseball history on October 7, 2001. On October 7, 2001, the Major League baseball team Seattle Mariners play their last regular game of the 2001 season, losing to the Texas Rangers by a score of 4-3. However, the Mariners' win over the Rangers the night before ties them at 116 with the 1906 Chicago Cubs for most games won in the regular season in the history of Major League baseball. [File 3629: Full Text >](#)

Seattle Mariners outfielder Ichiro Suzuki breaks the major league record for hits in a season on October 1, 2004. On October 1, 2004, Seattle Mariners outfielder Ichiro Suzuki (b. 1973) hits three singles to break an 84-year-old major league record and electrify a packed house at Safeco Field. That night he tops by two the 257 hits made by George Sisler (1893-1973) in 1920. Ichiro -- as he prefers to be called and is widely known -- goes on to finish the season with 262 hits. His record is hailed as the greatest individual achievement in Mariners history. [File 9569: Full Text >](#)

Seattle Mariners broadcaster Dave Niehaus gains entry to the National Baseball Hall of Fame on July 27, 2008. On July 27, 2008, Seattle Mariners broadcaster Dave Niehaus (1935-2010) receives the Ford C. Frick Award in a ceremony at the National Baseball Hall of Fame in Cooperstown, New York. The award, given annually for excellence in broadcasting, comes midway through his 32nd season with the team. It earns him a permanent place in the Hall's "Scribes and Mikemen" area and represents the high point of a career during which Niehaus achieved extraordinary popularity as the voice of the Mariners. [File 9986: Full Text >](#)

Ken Griffey Jr. retires from baseball on June 2, 2010, ending the most accomplished and celebrated career in Seattle Mariners history. On June 2, 2010, with a surprise announcement just a few hours before a game, Ken

Griffey Jr. (b. 1969) retires from baseball, ending the most accomplished and celebrated career in Seattle Mariners history. He leaves at age 40 with almost legendary status. In 22 seasons, he hit 630 home runs, the fifth-most in Major League Baseball history. In his prime he was also an outstanding centerfielder, as renowned for making difficult, clutch catches as for hitting dramatically timed home runs. His retirement is not totally unexpected -- he had lost his job as an every-day designated hitter -- but its suddenness is a jolt to his teammates and to fans who remember him as Seattle's best and most beloved player. [File 9449: Full Text >](#)

Safeco Field

Safeco Field, the Seattle Mariners' long-sought stadium, opens on July 15, 1999. On July 15, 1999, Safeco Field -- a long-sought, baseball-only stadium with a retractable roof -- opens to critical acclaim and some public resentment. The new half-billion dollar home of the Seattle Mariners is the product of a financing plan thrashed out by the state legislature after a different public-private financing plan was narrowly defeated at the polls. Construction is rushed and made more difficult by many design changes. But when the building opens, it is a showcase for the city and a moneymaker for the Mariners. [File 9565: Full Text >](#)

Sounders Soccer

Seattle Sounders Heather Johnson contributed this People's History of the soccer team, the Seattle Sounders. [File 4219: Full Text >](#)

Storm Basketball

Seattle Storm wins WNBA championship on October 12, 2004. On October 12, 2004, the Seattle Storm wins the Women's National Basketball Association (WNBA) championship, becoming only the third professional sports team in the city's history to earn a national title (after the Seattle Metropolitans, who won hockey's Stanley Cup in 1917, and the Seattle SuperSonics, champions of the National Basketball Association in 1979). [File 7330: Full Text >](#)

Four local women buy Seattle Storm for \$10 million on February 29, 2008. On February 29, 2008 -- a Leap Day -- the Seattle Storm is sold to four local women, ending months of uncertainty about the team's future. The sellers, a group of Oklahoma businessmen headed by Clayton "Clay" Bennett, had taken steps to move both the Storm and its National Basketball Association (NBA) counterpart, the Seattle SuperSonics, to Oklahoma City. Bennett initially insisted that the franchises would not be split, but later acknowledged that fan support for the Storm in Seattle could not be easily replicated in Oklahoma City. He and his partners agreed to sell the women's team, for \$10 million, pending approval by the Women's National Basketball Association (WNBA); they remained committed to relocating the Sonics. [File 8539: Full Text >](#)

The Seattle Storm wins its second WNBA championship on September 16, 2010. On September 16, 2010, the Seattle Storm defeats the Atlanta Dream 87-84 in Atlanta's Phillips Arena to win the Women's National Basketball Association (WNBA) championship. It is the franchise's second league championship and caps a record-setting season. The Storm's Brian Agler (b. 1958) and forward Lauren Jackson (b. 1981) take top regular-season honors, Agler as WNBA Coach of the Year, and Jackson as the league's Most Valuable Player (MVP) for the third time. The championship is won with an unprecedented sweep of seven playoff games. Thousands of fans come out in a downpour the next day to celebrate the triumph. [File 9602: Full Text >](#)

Seattle SuperSonics

Seattle SuperSonics -- Part 1 Seattle's professional basketball team for 41 years, the SuperSonics, held the double distinction of being our city's first major league sports franchise as well as the first -- and to date (2001), only -- to win a major sports championship. Longtime Seattle natives remember where they were when the SuperSonics finished off the Washington Bullets in Game 5 of the 1978-1979 NBA Finals as vividly as when Neil Armstrong walked on the moon. Names like Lenny Wilkens, Spencer Haywood, Slick Watts, Gus Williams, Fred Brown, Jack Sikma, and Gary Payton evoke passionate responses from fans who followed the team since its first game in 1967. The team's 41-year run in Seattle came to a controversial end in 2008 when the team's new owner, Clay Bennett, moved the team to Oklahoma City. [File 3029: Full Text >](#)

NBA awards Seattle the franchise that creates SuperSonics on December 20, 1966. On December 20, 1966, the NBA (National Basketball Association) awards Seattle a franchise, and team owner Sam Schulman and manager Don Richman begin to assemble the team christened SuperSonics. The Seattle SuperSonics will begin play for the 1967-68 NBA season at the Seattle Center Coliseum. [File 2946: Full Text >](#)

SuperSonics win first victory on October 21, 1967. On October 21, 1967, after losing their first two regular season games, the Seattle SuperSonics notch the first win in franchise history, a 117-110 overtime victory over San Diego. Walt Hazzard scores 22 points, while journeyman Dorie Murrey pulls down 14 rebounds. [File 3057: Full Text >](#)

SuperSonics win NBA Championship on June 1, 1979. On June 1, 1979, the Seattle SuperSonics beat the Washington Bullets 97-93 in Washington to win the team's first (and as of 2001 only) NBA (National Basketball Association) Championship. The win also delivers the city of Seattle its first (and as of 2001 only) major league sports championship. [File 3061: Full Text >](#)

Barry Ackerley purchases Seattle SuperSonics in October 1983. In October 1983, Seattle SuperSonics owner Sam Schulman agrees to sell Seattle's NBA (National Basketball Association) franchise to Barry Ackerley, a billboard magnate originally from Des Moines, Iowa. The sales price is reported to be \$22 million. [File 3064: Full Text >](#)

SuperSonics draft Gary Payton in June 1990. In June 1990, with the No. 2 selection in the 1990 NBA Draft (highest in team history), the SuperSonics select guard Gary Payton from Oregon State. Payton finishes his career at Oregon State University as the school's all-time leading scorer and sixth leading scorer in Pac-10 history. *Sports Illustrated* magazine goes so far as to anoint Payton the College Player of the Year. [File 3065: Full Text >](#)

Barry Ackerley sells Seattle SuperSonics to an investment group led by Howard Schultz (Starbucks) on January 11, 2001. On January 11, 2001, Barry Ackerley, owner of the Seattle SuperSonics NBA franchise, reaches an agreement to sell the team to an investment group led by Starbucks Corporation founder Howard Schultz. The sale price is reported to be \$200 million and includes the WNBA's Seattle Storm as well as Full House Entertainment, the business arm of the Sonics and Storm. [File 2943: Full Text >](#)

Seattle SuperSonics play final home game on April 13, 2008. On April 13, 2008, the Seattle SuperSonics play their final NBA game in Seattle, thus ending a 41-year run as one of the city's most successful sports franchises. A KeyArena crowd of 15,000 -- huge by the standards of this final, sorry season -- chants "Save Our Sonics!" They also direct an obscene chant toward Clay Bennett, the Sonics owner who plans to move the franchise to Oklahoma City. Former Sonics star Gary Payton is introduced in the stands and is greeted with a long, heartfelt standing ovation. Rookie star Kevin Durant says, "I almost cried, to be honest with you" (Bell). Other icons of the team's glorious past is in evidence, including the banner from the team's 1979 NBA championship -- Seattle's only major men's pro sports championship. The Sonics, inspired by this outpouring of fan emotion, pull off a comeback 99-95

victory over the Dallas Mavericks. In the larger sense, however, there will be no miracle comeback for the Seattle Sonics. They will soon cease to exist. [File 8910: Full Text >](#)

Tacoma Dome

Tacoma Dome opens its doors on April 21, 1983. On April 21, 1983, the Tacoma Dome opens its doors as one of the largest wood domed structures in the world. It is owned and operated by the City of Tacoma's Public Assembly Facilities Department and can accommodate up to 23,000 seats in a variety of configurations. [File 5154: Full Text >](#)

Dale Chihuly Bridge of Glass

Chihuly, Dale (b. 1941), Visual Artist Dale Chihuly is unquestionably the most famous living visual artist in the Northwest. His influence is international in scope and his reputation extends into several important areas, those of artist, teacher, designer, and co-founder of one of the world's most eminent glass schools, Pilchuck, located 50 miles north of Seattle in Stanwood (Snohomish County). Chihuly's work, like that of other important sculptors such as England's Henry Moore (1898-1986) and America's David Smith (1906-1965), is immediately recognizable, even to those not schooled in the fine arts. Despite his legions of imitators, his work retains the signature quality and excitement that has manifested in the numerous series and installations of his illustrious career. For his "indelible contributions to the local community and world at large through his art," the Seattle-King County Association of Realtors named Dale Chihuly First Citizen of 2006. [File 7754: Full Text >](#)

Washington State Museum of History

Washington State History Museum opens in Tacoma on August 10, 1996. On August 10, 1996, the Washington State History Museum opens in a new \$42 million building on Pacific Avenue in Tacoma. The museum will be one of the important features in the renaissance of downtown Tacoma, which will include a campus of the University of Washington, a convention center, two art museums, and a trolley line to run to the revitalized theater district. Union Station will become the U.S. Courthouse. [File 7892: Full Text >](#)

San Juan Blockhouse

Fort Steilacoom

Hudson's Bay Company establishes Fort Nisqually, first white settlement on Puget Sound, in April 1833. In spring 1833, the Hudson's Bay Company dispatches Archibald McDonald to Puget Sound from Fort Vancouver, on the Columbia River near present-day Portland, Oregon. McDonald establishes a stockade and trading post in April near Sequatchew Creek on the Nisqually Delta, which becomes the first permanent European settlement on Puget Sound. [File 5231: Full Text >](#)Fort Nisqually

Fort Vancouver

Hudson's Bay Company opens Fort Vancouver on March 19, 1825. On March 19, 1825, the Hudson's Bay Company opens Fort Vancouver on a bluff above the north bank of the Columbia River where the city of Vancouver, Clark County, is now located. For the next 20 years, the British-owned company, with its Fort Vancouver headquarters presided over by chief factor Dr. John McLoughlin (1784-1857), is the leading non-Indian presence in the region. [File 5251: Full Text >](#)

Emerald Downs

Cascade Crest Trail

Olympic National Park

President Franklin Roosevelt tours the Olympic Peninsula on October 1, 1937. On October 1, 1937, President Franklin D. Roosevelt (1882-1945) tours the Olympic Peninsula loop from Lake Crescent in Clallam County through Jefferson County to Lake Quinault and the cities of Aberdeen and Hoquiam in Grays Harbor County. Along the way he views demonstrations of fire fighting and tree topping, lunches at the Lake Quinault Inn, and hears arguments for and against the proposed national park on the peninsula. Roosevelt announces support for a park, which is created nine months later. [File 5434: Full Text >](#)

Construction of Olympic National Park Headquarters in Port Angeles begins in October 1939. In October 1939, Civilian Conservation Corps (CCC) crews begin building the headquarters site for the recently created Olympic National Park. The site is on Peabody Heights in the city of Port Angeles, a few miles beyond the northern boundary of the park, which then comprises 680,000 acres in the heart of the Olympic Mountains. Olympic National Park is the first to have its headquarters located outside its boundaries. Over the next two years the CCC crews will build six headquarters buildings in the National Park Service's distinctive Rustic style, utilizing local materials and native landscaping. [File 8216: Full Text >](#)

Rainier National Park

U.S. Congress creates Mount Rainier National Park on March 2, 1899. On March 2, 1899, both houses of the United States Congress pass legislation creating Mount Rainier National Park, dominated by the glacier-capped, 14,411 foot mountain located in Pierce County. The park is the country's fifth national park. [File 5345: Full Text >](#)

Paradise Inn on Mount Rainier opens on July 1, 1917. On July 1, 1917, a rustic and romantic park hotel, the Paradise Inn, located in Mount Rainier's beautiful Paradise Valley, holds its grand opening and the event's many attendees have the opportunity to examine what is the one of the Pacific Northwest's first high-elevation mountain resorts -- which is also among America's very first ski resorts. That same day, *The Seattle Daily Times* reports that "although much snow still remains in the valley, arrangements have been made to sleigh tourists over the snow from Longmire's Springs where cars may be parked." An unusually deep snow-pack for the month of July undoubtedly makes the summer excursion all that much more fun. [File 9223: Full Text >](#)

North Cascades National Park

North Cascades Conservation Council The North Cascades Conservation Council has, since 1957, been an unchanging agent of change. Turning out members for hearings, going to court, deploying hiking guides and picture books, it has helped preserve 2.21 million acres in Washington state between Stevens Pass and the Canadian border as parks, recreation areas, and wilderness area. It is, however, never satisfied and always wants more land set aside. The outfit is hard to love, impossible not to admire. [File 9714: Full Text >](#)

SeaFair

Seafair -- Beginnings Seafair, the gala annual Seattle-King County water festival, began in August 1950 and continues to this day. The festival erupts all over King County and has included hydroplane speed competitions, lifeboat races, steamboat races, tug boat tugs-of-war, waterskiing competitions, swimming meets, musical performances, high diving, underwater dancing, parades, parties, and joyous nightly boogying all over town. Additional events have been a Mardi Gras in the Central Area, an elaborate dragon parade in the International District, the historic Aqua Follies at Green Lake (which ran every summer from 1950 to the late 1960s), Scottish Highland Games, a ritual boat burning, and coronations of water kings and water queens, among numerous other elaborate entertainments. [File 1470: Full Text >](#)

Seafair including Aqua Follies is held for the first time in King County from August 11 to 20, 1950. From August 11 to 20, 1950, Seafair is held for the first time in King County. Seafair is a festival of boat parades, a swimming meet, a badminton tournament, a Kiddies' Doll and Pet Parade, dancing, musicals, bicycle races, tugs of war, a baby beauty contest, Scottish Highland games, national waterski championships, a Hole-in-one Golf Tournament, a steamboat race, a lifeboat race, a "Huckleberry Finn fishing rodeo," the world's largest clambake, a bonfire using an old boat as fuel, and a grand finale of fireworks. As part of Seafair, the International District holds an elaborate "International Carnival" involving a "a huge lion-headed beast engaged in mock combat," there is a Filipino bamboo dance, and the famous Bon Odori. Last but not least, on August 11, 1950, on Seafair's opening day, the Aqua Theatre on Green Lake holds its first show. [File 1469: Full Text >](#)

Puyallup Daffodil festival

Western Washington State Fair

First Washington State Agricultural Fair opens in Yakima on September 24, 1894. On September 24, 1894, the first annual Washington State Agricultural Fair opens in Yakima. Politicians, local residents, and Indians from across the region gather together to participate in the festivities. [File 7714: Full Text >](#)

First Puyallup Valley Fair is held in Puyallup on October 4-6, 1900. On October 4-6, 1900, a group of Puyallup Valley farmers, business people, and other residents join together to produce an agricultural and livestock fair designed to highlight local products. The event is called the Valley Fair and is so successful that it becomes an annual event. In time it will become the Western Washington Fair Association's Puyallup Fair and draw the fifth-highest attendance of any fair in the country. [File 8004: Full Text >](#)

Wenatchee Apple Festival

Spokane's Lilac Festival

Omak Stampede Suicide Race and Rodeo

Ellensburg Rodeo

Ellensburg holds its first rodeo on September 13, 1923. On September 13, 1923, Ellensburg townspeople gather to participate in a Western rodeo. The event becomes an annual celebration of both the town and Western culture. [File 5094: Full Text >](#)

Whitman Mission Historic Site

CHAPTER 13: STATE GOVERNMENT and POLITICS

Governors of Washington Territory and Washington State This is a complete list of the governors of Washington Territory and Washington state. The list includes birth and death dates and dates of office. Washington Territory was founded on March 2, 1853. Washington became a state on November 11, 1889. [File 5454: Full Text >](#)